



Lewis V. Thomas

ELEMENTARY TURKISH

Revised and Edited by
Norman Itzkowitz



Editor's Note

LEWIS VICTOR THOMAS was born in Chicago, February 27, 1914, and died in Princeton, October 21, 1965. He grew up in Indiana and was proud of his Hoosier background. He was trained as a classicist and orientalist at the University of Chicago and its Oriental Institute. Shortly after World War II he took his Ph.D. under Paul Wittek at Brussels. In 1947 he joined the Princeton faculty.

An accomplished teacher, Thomas made his seminars in Ottoman history and his courses in the Turkish language a training ground for many of America's growing group of Ottomanists and Turkish specialists. As a teacher he was keenly aware of the lack of adequate teaching materials. During his last year Thomas was hard at work preparing this grammar for publication, but his illness prevented him from completing the project to which he had devoted so much effort. He asked me to see the book through to publication, and I have made the necessary revisions with the kind assistance of Mr. Salih Necdet Ok, whose help I gratefully acknowledge.

In the process of editing the manuscript I have preserved almost all of Thomas's organization and method. This book has helped many Princeton students to learn modern Turkish quickly. It is hoped that it will now enable even more students to achieve that goal and that through them Lewis V. Thomas's influence will continue in the field of Turkish studies that he served so well.

Norman Itzkowitz

Preface

THE PURPOSE of this book is to enable English-speaking students to recognize, understand, and begin to use the basic patterns of modern standard Turkish. These basic patterns are, insofar as possible, presented one by one in a sequence that experience has shown to yield maximum results for English speakers.

The exercises are intended to present the student with the elements of Turkish in a form which he can begin to use. New vocabulary occurring in the exercises can be located in the Glossary.

An effort has been made to limit the material presented to those forms and patterns that in fact make up elementary standard modern Turkish. My thanks are due to the generations of Princeton University students who have uncomplainingly used the book in its successive mimeographed editions and in so doing have helped me learn what elementary Turkish is. Thanks are also due to my colleagues Professor Norman Itzkowitz and Mr. Cevat Erder and to a valiant typist, Mrs. Elsa Washington.

Lewis V. Thomas

Contents

LESSONS

- 1 The Alphabet. 'Soft g.' Doubled Consonants. The Circumflex Accent. Spelling. Syllabification. Punctuation 3
- 2 Cardinal Numbers. 'One Half.' *Kaç*, *Çok*, and *Az*. *Parça* and *Tane* 13
- 3 Position of Adjectives. Indefinite Article with Adjectives. Predicate Modifiers 18
- 4 Definite Article. Adjective and Noun. Agglutination. Vowel Harmony. The Plural 21
- 5 Common Infinitive. Variable Consonants. Past Definite Verb. Agreement of Subject and Verb 25
- 6 Verbs of the Type *Gitmek* (*Gider*). The Objective Definite. Variable Consonants Followed by Objective Definite. Doubled Consonants Followed by Objective Definite. 'Ayn Followed by Objective Definite. Final *k* Followed by Objective Definite. Nouns of the Type *Oğul* Followed by Objective Definite 35
- 7 Personal Pronouns. Interrogative Pronouns. Demonstratives. The Imperative. Word Order 42
- 8 *Nere**, *Bura**, *Ora**. Dative Suffix *-(y) V²*. Locative Suffix *-t/d V²*. Ablative Suffix *-t/d V²ⁿ*. Dative, Locative, and Ablative Forms of *Nere**, *Bura**, *Ora**, the Personal Pronouns, the Interrogatives, and the Demonstratives. Fractions. Calendar. The Word *d V²* 47
- 9 Negative Verb. Interrogative Particle (*m V⁴*). Negative Interrogative. Negative Expressions 54

10	The Possessive Construction. Possessive Definite Suffix -(n) V ⁴ n. Possessive Suffixes. The Possessive Construction, Types I and II. Personal Pronouns as Members of Possessive Constructions. Possessive Complexes. The Word <i>Sahip</i> in Possessive Constructions. Suffixes added to a Possessive Suffix. <i>Kendi</i>	60
11	Infinitives. General Verbs	72
12	Past General Verbs. Future Verbs. Adverbs. Comparison. Emphatics. The Suffix -ç/c V ²	79
13	Postpositions. Expressions of Location	86
14	The Verb 'to Be.' <i>Var</i> and <i>yok</i> . The Resumptive Question	93
15	The Suffixes -l V ⁴ , -s V ⁴ z, and -l V ⁴ k. Past Indefinite, Past Narrative, and Past Perfect Verb Forms	99
16	The Partitive. Participles. Gerund -t/d V ⁴ k. Indirect Discourse. Relative Gerundive and Adverb	104
17	-ki. <i>Ki. Çünkü</i> . The Professional Doer. The Habitual Doer. Diminutives. Noun of Manner	111
18	Progressive Verb Forms. Common Infinitive plus the Locative with 'to Be.' Ordinals and Distributives. Gerundive in -(y) V ²	117
19	'To Be Able'	123
20	Auxiliary Verb. Optative-Subjunctive. Necessity. Condition	128
21	Passive Verbs. The Agent. Causative, Reflexive, and Mutual Verbs	135
22	Abbreviating Verb Forms. Attendant Circumstances. Verb Form in -(y) V ⁴ n c V ² . Verb Form in -t/d V ⁴ k ç V ²	141
23	Statement on Verb Forms. True and Untrue Conditions	148
	KEY TO EXERCISES	152
	VOCABULARY	176

Lesson 1

The Alphabet. 'Soft g.' Doubled Consonants.

The Circumflex Accent. Spelling.

Syllabification. Punctuation

I. The alphabet

The Turkish alphabet contains 29 letters. *Q*, *w*, and *x* do not occur. Six Turkish letters are unfamiliar to the American student's eye. They are the three consonants *ç*, *ğ*, and *y*, and the three vowels *ı*, *ö*, and *ü*. The capital forms of these letters are *Ç*, *Ğ*, *Ş*, *ı*, *I*, *ö*, *Ö*, and *ü*, *Ü*. Note that the capital form of *ı* (called the 'undotted i') is *I*; that of *i* (the 'dotted i') is *İ*.

LETTER	NAME	APPROXIMATE PRONUNCIATION
A a	a	as <i>u</i> in <i>sun</i>
B b	be	as in English
C c	ce	as <i>j</i> in <i>jump</i>
Ç ç	çe	as <i>ch</i> in <i>church</i>
D d	de	as in English
E e	e	as in <i>fed</i>
F f	fe	as in English
G g	ge	as in <i>go</i>

LETTER	NAME	APPROXIMATE PRONUNCIATION
Ğ ğ	yumuşak ge (soft g)	as <i>y</i> in <i>yet</i> (See the note in Lesson 1, section 2.)
H h	he	as in <i>head</i>
I ı	ı	as the second vowel in <i>nation</i>
İ i	i	as in <i>bit</i>
J j	je	as <i>s</i> in <i>measure</i>
K k	ke	as in <i>king</i>
L l	le	as in English
M m	me	as in English
N n	ne	as in English
O o	o	as <i>o</i> in <i>false</i>
Ö ö	ö	as <i>eu</i> in French <i>peu</i>
P p	pe	as in English
R r	re	as in <i>rock</i>
S s	se	as in <i>sit</i>
Ş ş	şe	as <i>sh</i> in <i>shoe</i>
T t	te	as in English
U u	u	as <i>u</i> in <i>pull</i>
Ü ü	ü	as <i>ü</i> in <i>über</i>
V v	ve	as in English
Y y	ye	as in <i>yellow</i>
Z z	ze	as in English

In general, stress tends to be placed on the last syllable in a word.

2. 'Soft g'

Ğ, ğ (*yumuşak ge* 'soft g'). This letter never begins a word. When it immediately follows a back vowel, a vowel formed in the back of the mouth (*a, ı, o, u*: see Lesson 4, section 4), its sound resembles the glide one hears between the words 'go on' or between the words 'go over' when either of these pairs of words is slurred (as in *ağaç* 'tree'). When *yumuşak ge* immediately follows a front vowel, a vowel formed in the front of the mouth (*e, i, ö, ü*: see Lesson 4), its sound is approximately that of *y* in 'yet' (as in *diğer* 'other').

3. Doubled consonants

The sound of a doubled consonant is prolonged well beyond that of the same consonant when single.

elli fifty eli the hand (objective)

4. The circumflex accent

The circumflex accent (^) may stand over the vowels *a*, *i*, and *u* (*â*, *î*, *û*). It has two distinct functions.

- a. Standing over the letter *a* which is preceded by *g*, *k*, or *l* (*gâ*, *kâ*, *lâ*), the circumflex indicates that a *y* sound is to be pronounced between the consonant and the following *a*. In the syllable *lâ*, the *y* sound is fainter than in the syllables *gâ* and *kâ*.

gâvur	heathen
kâr	profit (compare <i>kar</i> 'snow')
lâle	tulip

- b. Except in the syllables *gâ*, *kâ*, and *lâ*, the circumflex indicates that the vowel sound is to be prolonged. This is the case in the many (originally Arabic) adjectives ending in *î*.

Şamî	Damascene (<i>Şam</i> 'Damascus')
Lübnanî	Lebanese (<i>Lübnan</i> 'the Lebanon')
millî	national
edebî	literary
iktisadî	economic, economical

Sometimes the circumflex is used to distinguish between two words which, without it, would be spelled and pronounced identically.

Ali	proper name (of a man)	âli	lofty, sublime
------------	------------------------	------------	----------------

Occasionally a word beginning with *ga*, *ka*, or *la* has a long vowel in the first syllable but does not have in that syllable the *y* sound which the use of a circumflex (*gâ*, *kâ*, *lâ*) would indicate. This may be shown by doubling the *a*, e.g. *kaatil* 'murderer.' Compare *katil* 'murder.'

5. Spelling

Turkish spelling is phonetic, the same letter always indicating the same sound. Words borrowed from other languages are frequently spelled out phonetically.

Şevrole	Chevrolet	Çörçil	Churchill
----------------	-----------	---------------	-----------

NOTE: Any sequence of vowel immediately followed by vowel is to be pronounced with a full stop between the two vowels. (The use of *aa* to indicate

long *a* in a word like *kaatil* 'murderer' [see above, section 4b] is the sole exception to this rule.) Words containing the sequence vowel-vowel are always of non-Turkish origin. Some Turkish writers and presses use an apostrophe to show the full stop between the two vowels, but this is now very rare. The stop is always to be made, whether an apostrophe is used or not.

<i>saat</i> or <i>sa'at</i>	hour, time: watch, clock
<i>Sait</i> or <i>Sa'it</i>	proper name (of a man)

(For other uses of the apostrophe, see Lesson 4.)

6. Syllabification

Turkish admits six syllable patterns (V = vowel; C = consonant).

V	<i>o</i>	he, she, it; that (demonstrative)
VC	<i>ak</i>	white
CV	<i>ve</i>	and
CVC	<i>dağ</i>	mountain
VCC	<i>üst</i>	top
CVCC	<i>genç</i>	young

Each syllable begins with a single vowel or with a single consonant. Borrowed words which begin with two consonants may undergo one of two changes.

- a. A vowel is inserted between the two initial consonants

kiral king

- b. A vowel is prefixed to the first consonant.

ispirto spirits, alcohol

- c. With some borrowings, however, this does not occur.

kredi credit

7. Punctuation

Turkey's authors, editors, and publishers have not yet standardized punctuation. The period and question mark are ordinarily used as they are in English. A comma often indicates the end of the subject. Direct quotations may be shown by single or double quotation marks, by continental quotation marks, by dashes, or even by parentheses. Frequently, only the beginning of a quotation is shown. Often, a quotation is not indicated at all.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud.

anne	mother	dört beş	four (or) five
baba	father	dört beş	four (or) five
altı	six	çocuk	children
kaç?	how much?	ev	house
	how many?	erken	early
altı ağaç	six trees	fena	bad
kaç ağaç?	how many trees?	fincan	cup
bir	one; a, an	fil	elephant
beş	five	hafta	week
ben	I	kaç hafta?	how many weeks?
büyük	big, large, great	bir fincan	one cup; a cup
balık	fish	büyük cami	big mosque
beş balık	five fish	fena fil	bad elephant
cadde	street, avenue	gün	day
camı	mosque	göl	lake
sözcü	spokesman	geniş	wide
gece	night	göz	eye
kaç gece?	how many nights?	fena gün	bad day
beş cadde	five streets	büyük göl	big lake
bir gece	one night; a night	oğul	son
çocuk	child (male or female)	yağ	grease, (cooking) fat, (vegetable) oil
büyük çocuk	big child, boy	çok yağ	lots of grease
çok	much, many, very	diğer	(the) other
çok büyük	very big	diğer göz	(the) other eye
çok gece	many nights	eğer	if
güç	difficult	eğer ben	if I . . .
geç	late	bahçe	garden, yard
dört	four	sabah	morning
dokuz	nine	kahve	coffee, coffeehouse
doksan	ninety	kaşık	spoon
diş	tooth	şeker	sugar
dokuz diş	nine teeth	bir fincan	one cup of coffee, a cup of coffee
doksan gece	ninety nights	kahve	
çok cami	many mosques	kaç kaşık	how many spoons
		şeker?	of sugar?

dokuz kaşık	nine spoons
iki	two
iyi	good
iyi gün	good day
fena gün	bad day
biz	we
siz	you (polite singular, normal plural)
altmış	sixty
hayır	no (opposite of 'yes')
kırk	forty
kısa	short
Japonya	Japan
garaj	garage
kız	girl, daughter, maiden, female
kim?	who?
küçük	small, little
küçük kız	little girl
el	hand
elli	fifty
lira	lira (pound: unit of money; the Turkish Lira contains 100 <i>kuruş</i>)
kuruş	kuruş (unit of money)
kaç lira?	how many liras?
kaç kuruş?	how many kuruş? how much (does x cost)?
40 lira	forty Turkish
40 kuruş	Liras and forty kuruş
kol	arm
akşam	evening
minare	minaret

meyva	fruit
çok meyva	much fruit, lots of fruit
et	meat
ekmek	bread
çok ekmek	much bread
bir ekmek	one (a) bread (i.e., a loaf of bread)
sen	you (familiar singular)
onlar	they
limon	lemon
çok limon	lots of lemons, lots of lemon
on	ten
on bir	eleven
on iki	twelve
on beş hafta	fifteen weeks
o	he, she, it; that (demonstrative), those
o ev	that house
o beş ev	those five houses
kolay	easy
dört göz	four eyes
dört büyük göz	four big eyes
pul	stamp (postage, etc.)
peynir	cheese
kaç pul?	how many stamps?
parça	piece
top	ball, sphere
renk	color
bardak	drinking glass
su	water
bir bardak su	a glass of water
beş bardak su	five glasses of water

şey	thing	yüz	face; hundred
şey . . .	uh-uh ahem . . . (said when one hesitates in speech)	ve	and
		siz ve biz	you and we
		evet	yes
şimdi	now	havuz	pool
baş	head	gâvur	heathen
at	horse	yüksek	tall, high
otuz	thirty	yıl	year
otuz dokuz at	thirty-nine horses	yeni	new
süt	milk	ayak	foot
sütçü	milkman	az	few, (a) little, insufficient
Türk	Turk, Turkish	sekiz	eight
bu	this, these	seksen	eighty
bu ev	this house	kâr	profit
bu üç ev	these three houses	kar	snow
şu	that (demonstrative), those (far over yonder)	lâle	tulip
		Şam	Damascus
		Şamî	Damascene
şu ev	that house	Ali	man's name
şu beş ev	those five houses	âli	lofty, sublime

B. Practice the following words aloud.

1. COUNTING

bir	one	yirmi	twenty
iki	two	otuz	thirty
üç	three	kırk	forty
dört	four	elli	fifty
beş	five	altmış	sixty
altı	six	yetmiş	seventy
yedi	seven	seksen	eighty
sekiz	eight	doksan	ninety
dokuz	nine	yüz	(one) hundred
on	ten		

2. PRONOUNS

ben	I	biz	we
sen	you (familiar singular)	siz	you (plural, polite singular)
o	he, she, it	onlar	they

3. DEMONSTRATIVES

bu	this, these	şu	that, those (at a considerable distance,
o	that, those		see Lesson 7, section 3)

4. INTERROGATIVES

kim?	who?	ne zaman?	when? (what time?)
ne?	what?	kaç?	how much? how many?

5. PROPER NAMES

of men		of women	
Ahmet	Ali	Suat	Fahrünnisa
Mehmet	Erdoğan	Süheylâ	Selma
Sait		Mihri	

NOTE 1: Mehmet is the Turkish form of the Arabic name Muḥammad. The full form (Muhammed) is used in Turkish only to indicate the prophet of Islam.

NOTE 2: In modern usage, *Bay*, placed before a man's full name, represents English 'Mr.'

Bay Mehmet Timuroğlu Mr. Mehmet Timuroğlu

For the names of women, *Bayan* indicates either 'Mrs.' or 'Miss.'

Bayan Selma Timuroğlu Mrs. Selma Timuroğlu (or)
Miss Selma Timuroğlu

In addition to this modern and official usage, there remains in everyday currency an older usage, dating from the time when Turks had not yet adopted last names. In this style of address, the word *Bey* placed after a man's given name represents English 'Mr.'

Mehmet Bey (Mr.) Mehmet

İsmail Hakkı Bey (Mr.) İsmail Hakkı (İsmail Hakkı is a double given name, not a first and last name in the Western sense. Today this man might also appear as Bay İ. H. Ağaoğlu.)

In the older usage the word *Hanım* placed after the given name (or names) represents English 'Mrs.' or 'Miss.'

Mihri Hanım Mrs. Mihri (or) Miss Mihri

Persons who continue to use the older forms regard them as being no less formal than the new forms.

6. MODIFIERS

büyük	big, large, great	kolay	easy
küçük	little, small	geç	late
güç	difficult	erken	early

iyi	good, well	çok	much, many; very
fena	bad, badly	az	few, (a) little, insufficient

7. TIME

yıl	year	akşam	evening
ay	month	saat	hour, time;
hafta	week		watch, clock
gün	day	dakika	minute
gece	night	saniye	second
sabah	morning		

8. FAMILY

anne	mother	oğul	son
baba	father	kız	daughter, maiden,
çocuk	child		girl, female

9. THE BODY

baş	head	diş	tooth
yüz	face	kol	arm
göz	eye	el	hand
kulak	ear	bacak	leg
ağız	mouth	ayak	foot

10. THE CITY

şehir	city	ev	house
kasaba	town	bahçe	garden
köy	village	cami	mosque
cadde	avenue, street	minare	minaret

11. EATING

çay	tea	limon	lemon
kahve	coffee, coffeehouse	elma	apple
su	water	portakal	orange
süt	milk	ekmek	bread
bardak	drinking glass		(loaf of) bread
fincan	cup	peynir	cheese
yağ	grease, fat, oil	şeker	sugar, candy
meyva	fruit	tereyağ	butter

C. Practice saying the names of these Turkish cities and geographical features. Write them, dividing them into syllables.

1. CITIES

Adana		İstanbul	
Afyonkarahisar		Kars	
<i>afyon</i>	poppy, opium	Kayseri	
<i>kara</i>	black	Konya	
<i>hisar</i>	fortress	Kütahya	
Balıkesir		Malatya	
Bursa		Samsun	
Diyarbakir		Trabzon	
Edirne		Yenişehir	
Erzurum		<i>yeni</i>	new
Eskişehir			
<i>eski</i>	old		
<i>şehir</i>	city		

2. GEOGRAPHICAL FEATURES

Akdeniz	Mediterranean	Marmara Denizi	Sea of Marmara
	Sea	Van Gölü	Lake (of) Van
<i>ak</i>	white	Ağrı Dağı	Mt. Ararat
<i>deniz</i>	sea		(Mountain of Ağrı)
Boğaziçi	Bosporus	Allahüekber	the Allahüekber
Çanakkale		Dağları	Mountains
Boğazı	Dardanelles	<i>Allahü ekber</i>	God is greatest
Ege Denizi	Aegean Sea		(Arabic)
İskenderun	Gulf of	Erciyaş Dağı	Mt. Argaeus
Körfezi	Iskenderun	Kavaşşahap	the Kavushshap
İzmir Körfezi	Gulf of Izmir	Dağları	Mountains
Karadeniz	Black Sea	Toros Dağları	the Taurus
Tuz Gölü	Salt Lake		Mountains
Kızılırmak	Red River		
<i>kızıl</i>	red, scarlet		
<i>ırmak</i>	river, stream		

Lesson 2

Cardinal Numbers. 'One Half.'

Kaç, Çok, and Az. Parça and Tane

I. Cardinal numbers

bir ev	one house, a house
bir kere	one time, one occurrence, once
bir defa	one time, one occurrence, once
iki ev	two houses, the two houses

NOTE: Turkish has no separate word for 'the' (the definite article). Hence every 'absolute' noun (i.e., the simple noun form with no suffix attached) may mean 'X' or 'the X.'

<i>ev</i>	house (or) the house	<i>peynir</i>	cheese (or) the cheese
üç çocuk	(the) three children	sekiz hafta	(the) eight weeks
dört cami	(the) four mosques	dokuz fincan	(the) nine cups
beş cadde	(the) five streets	on kız	(the) ten girls
altı gece	(the) six nights	bin bir gece	(the) thousand and one nights
yedi gün	(the) seven days		

Cardinal numbers are followed by singular nouns.

The cardinal numbers are:

bir	1	sekiz	8	on beş	15
iki	2	dokuz	9	on altı	16
üç	3	on	10	on yedi	17
dört	4	on bir	11	on sekiz	18
beş	5	on iki	12	on dokuz	19
altı	6	on üç	13	yirmi	20
yedi	7	on dört	14	yirmi bir	21

yirmi iki	22	otuz bir	31	doksan	90
yirmi üç	23	otuz iki	32	yüz	100
yirmi dört	24	otuz üç	33	yüz bir	101
yirmi beş	25	(etc.)	(etc.)	yüz iki	102
yirmi altı	26	kırk	40	yüz on	110
yirmi yedi	27	elli	50	yüz on bir	111
yirmi sekiz	28	altmış	60	iki yüz	200
yirmi dokuz	29	yetmiş	70	dokuz yüz	
otuz	30	seksen	80	doksan dokuz	999
bin	1,000	yüz bin	100,000		
bin bir	1,001	(bir) milyon	1,000,000		
on bin	10,000	(bir) milyar	1,000,000,000		

2. 'One half'

There are two common words for 'one half.'

yarım, used when no other number is mentioned in the expression

yarım kilo	$\frac{1}{2}$ kilogram
beş yüz gram	500 grams
yarım kilometre	$\frac{1}{2}$ kilometer
beş yüz metre	500 meters
yarım saat	$\frac{1}{2}$ hour
otuz dakika	30 minutes

buçuk, used with numerals

bir buçuk saat	1 $\frac{1}{2}$ hours
on buçuk kilometre	10 $\frac{1}{2}$ kilometers
iki buçuk kilo	2 $\frac{1}{2}$ kilos

3. Kaç, çok, and az

Like the cardinal numbers, the 'counting words' **kaç** 'how much?' 'how many?' **çok** 'much,' 'many,' and **az** 'few,' 'a little' are followed by singular nouns.

kaç lira?	how many liras?	kaç dolar?	how many dollars?
kaç kuruş?	how many kuruş?	kaç kaşık	how many spoons
kaç para?	how much money?	şeker?	of sugar?

kaç elma?	how many apples?	az ev	few houses
çok ev	many houses, lots of houses	az para	little money, not much money
çok şeker	much sugar, lots of sugar	çok az para	very little money
çok limon	many lemons, lots of lemons, lots of lemon	biraz şeker	a little sugar
		birçok	a good many
		gazete	newspapers
		az çok	more or less

4. Parça and tane

These two 'counting words' are to be distinguished from each other:

parça 'piece' (one part, section, segment, etc., of a whole);

tane 'piece' (the meaningless pidgin English counting word 'piece' as in 'one piece man,' 'one piece house,' i.e., 'one man,' 'one house')

Tane may be used or omitted after the cardinal numbers.

kaç parça ekmek?	how many pieces of bread? (For 'slice' use <i>dilim</i> .)
kaç tane ekmek?	how many 'breads?' how many loaves of bread?
kaç ev?	how many houses?
kaç tane ev?	how many houses?
beş ev	five houses
beş tane ev	five houses
beş tane	five (of whatever is being counted)

Exercises

A. Count aloud to 100, from 100 to 200 by 5's, from 200 to 300 by 10's, from 300 to 500 by 20's.

B. Practice aloud. Translate.

- | | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. Kaç kilo et? | 9. çok az limon |
| 2. $\frac{1}{2}$ kilo kahve | 10. 12 tane portakal |
| 3. az su | 11. $3\frac{1}{2}$ saat |
| 4. $1\frac{1}{2}$ kilo şeker | 12. 30 cadde |
| 5. birkaç kere | 13. $2\frac{1}{2}$ lira |
| 6. birkaç kilo elma | 14. Kaç tane elma? |
| 7. 250 gram tereyağ | 15. Kaç kuruş? |
| 8. 5 fincan çay | 16. $3\frac{1}{2}$ elma |

- | | |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 17. 60 saniye | 34. çok elma |
| 18. 60 dakika | 35. 1 baş |
| 19. 24 saat | 36. 2 el |
| 20. 1 gün | 37. 2 ayak |
| 21. 7 gün | 38. 2 göz |
| 22. 4 hafta | 39. çok az limon |
| 23. 12 ay | 40. 2 bardak su |
| 24. 365 gün | 41. az su |
| 25. 100 yıl | 42. biraz süt |
| 26. 2 ağaç | 43. çok az süt |
| 27. 3 oğul | 44. 10,000 kilometre |
| 28. Kaç kilo şeker? | 45. 8 gazete |
| 29. $\frac{1}{2}$ kilo şeker | 46. $\frac{1}{2}$ bardak su |
| 30. 100 defa | 47. $7\frac{1}{2}$ saat |
| 31. Kaç para? | 48. 2 dilim ekmek |
| 32. az para | 49. 3 kaşık şeker |
| 33. Kaç tane limon? | 50. 3 tane ekmek |

C. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud. Spell out all numbers.

- | | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. one half kilo of tea | 20. three rivers |
| 2. three kilos of sugar | 21. seventy-seven lakes |
| 3. two hundred grams of meat | 22. three cities |
| 4. a slice of bread | 23. sixty-four boys |
| 5. two cups of coffee | 24. one hundred children |
| 6. eight apples | 25. one eye |
| 7. How many houses? | 26. two eyes |
| 8. two minarets | 27. two feet |
| 9. one mosque | 28. thirty-two teeth |
| 10. three years | 29. one head |
| 11. four days | 30. five hundred and fifty-five days |
| 12. two weeks | 31. fifteen years |
| 13. six months | 32. twelve girls |
| 14. much milk | 33. nineteen times |
| 15. a little water | 34. sixteen gardens |
| 16. two loaves of bread | 35. thirty-five nights |
| 17. two slices of bread | 36. thirty-six days |
| 18. very little sugar | 37. fifty-seven and a half grams |
| 19. many trees | |

- 38. one hundred liras
- 39. two and a half liras
- 40. two thousand kilowatts
- 41. many mosques
- 42. How many mosques ?
- 43. a good many streets
- 44. much water

- 45. little water
- 46. How many glasses
of water ?
- 47. a little water
- 48. four times
- 49. much fruit
- 50. many apples

Lesson 3

Position of Adjectives. Indefinite Article with Adjectives. Predicate Modifiers

1. Position of adjectives

büyük kız	(the) big girl
küçük kız	(the) little girl
genç adam	(the) young man
yaşlı kadın	(the) old woman (<i>yaşlı</i> 'old,' of humans; otherwise use <i>eski</i>)

When an adjective precedes a noun, it modifies that noun, as in English.

2. Indefinite article with adjectives

bir köpek	a dog; one dog
bir gün	a day; one day
bir elma	an apple; one apple
bir bardak su	a glass of water; one glass of water
büyük bir kız	a big girl
küçük bir kız	a little girl
çok küçük bir kız	a very little girl
iki çok küçük kız	two very little girls
küçük güzel kız	(the) little, pretty girl
küçük güzel bir kız	a little, pretty girl
küçük ve güzel bir kız	a little and pretty girl

The word *bir* serves as the number 'one' and as the indefinite article 'a,' 'an.' When the indefinite article and one or more other adjectives modify

one noun, Turkish reverses the English order. The adjective or adjectives come first, and the indefinite article immediately precedes the noun. When the word *bir* means 'one,' however, it precedes the adjective (or adjectives), as in English, e.g., *büyük bir kız* 'a big girl,' *bir büyük kız* 'one big girl.'

NOTE 1: Turkish sometimes uses *bir* with a plural noun. (See Lesson 4, section 5.)

NOTE 2: *Bir* may be omitted from a Turkish sentence in which the English would require the indefinite article. (See Lesson 14, section 1.)

3. Predicate modifiers

O kız uzun.	That girl is tall.
Bu kız kısa.	This girl is short.
Küçük kız güzel.	The little girl is pretty.
Güzel kız küçük.	The pretty girl is little.
Bu küçük kız çok güzel.	This little girl is very pretty.
Bu çok küçük kız güzel.	This very small girl is beautiful.
Bu kız çok küçük ve çok güzel.	This girl is very tiny and very pretty.
Bir kız uzun, bir kız kısa.	One girl is tall, (and) one girl is short.
Bu çay çok iyi.	This tea is very good.
Güzel kız uzun, diğer kız kısa.	The pretty girl is tall; the other girl is short.
Bu iyi.	This is good.

In speech (and to a lesser degree in the formal written language), the third person forms, singular and plural, present tense of the Turkish verb 'to be' are not expressed. Hence a Turkish adjective in the predicate position (i.e., following the noun it modifies) expresses a complete sentence, e.g., *O kız uzun* 'That girl (is) tall.'

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

- | | |
|-----------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. güzel bir anne | 5. genç bir kız |
| 2. O anne güzel. | 6. Bir kız genç. |
| 3. Çocuk çok uzun. | 7. Genç kız küçük. |
| 4. çok uzun bir çocuk | 8. Bu genç kız çok küçük. |

9. Bu iki kadın iyi.
10. on iki iyi kadın
11. Bu çok küçük.
12. İki yaşlı kadın
13. İki kadın yaşlı.
14. İki yaşlı kadın kısa.
15. Baba iyi.
16. bir iyi baba
17. iki iyi baba
18. İki baba iyi.
19. Kaç tane baba?
20. Kaç gün?
21. Kaç tane elma?
22. iyi bir gün
23. Bugün iyi.
24. Bu, iyi bir gün.
25. büyük otomobil
26. iki büyük otomobil
27. İki otomobil büyük.
28. Bu, küçük bir otomobil.
29. Bir otomobil yeni,
diğer otomobil eski.

30. Büyük otomobil yeni.
31. Diğer otomobil çok eski.
32. Bu, çok eski.
33. Bu şeker iyi.
34. biraz şeker
35. O göl çok büyük.
36. iki güzel göl
37. İki göl güzel.
38. az para
39. Bu para çok az.
40. biraz para
41. üç fincan kahve
42. üç kahve
43. üç tane kahve
44. birçok fincan
45. birçok fincan çay
46. Kaç para?
47. otuz beş lira on beş
kuruş
48. beş eski ev
49. Beş ev eski.
50. Bu çok eski.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. a big foot
2. one big foot
3. two big feet
4. This foot is big.
5. One foot is large; the other
foot is small.
6. How many women?
7. two old women
8. These two women are old.
9. The two old women are short.
10. two short old women
11. a nice street
12. two nice streets
13. This city is new; the other city
is old.
14. three tall minarets
15. this old house
16. This house is high.
17. The old house is large;
the new house is small.
18. How many houses?
19. How many small houses?
20. How many houses are
small?
21. This house is very small.
22. The very small house is
lovely.
23. four young men
24. The four men are young.
25. The four young men are tall.

Lesson 4

Definite Article. Adjective and Noun.

Agglutination. Vowel Harmony. The Plural

küçük çocuk	(the) small child
Çocuk küçük.	(The) child (is) small.
büyük çocuk	(the) big child
Çocuk büyük.	(The) child (is) big.

1. Definite article

Turkish has no separate word equivalent to the English definite article 'the.' Hence any Turkish noun without suffixes (or with the plural suffix: see below, section 5) may be understood with or without 'the' as the sense requires.

baş head (or) the head *kahve* coffee (or) the coffee

NOTE: For the devices by which, in certain circumstances, Turkish specifies whether or not a noun is definite see Lesson 6, section 2.

2. Adjective and noun

When an adjective does not modify a noun, the adjective can become a substantive.

Bu genç çocuk güzel. (*Genç* is used as an attributive adjective.) 'This young child is pretty.' **Bu anne genç.** (*Genç* is used as a predicate adjective.) 'This mother is young.'

Bu genç güzel. (*Genç* is used as a substantive 'youth,' 'youngster.') 'This youngster is pretty.'

Such a word, when it is an adjective, takes no suffixes. Such a word, when it is a substantive, may take suffixes.

3. Agglutination

Turkish is said to be an agglutinative language because every element that is affixed to a word or to another element in order to convey meaning is a suffix. Turkish uses no prefixes, except for a few stereotyped borrowings from other languages.

4. Vowel harmony

The eight Turkish vowels are divided into two classes: (1) those formed toward the front of the mouth and (2) those formed toward the back. These classes are called front and back vowels, respectively.

FRONT VOWELS	BACK VOWELS
e	a
i	ı
ö	o
ü	u

NOTE: The vowels *ö* and *o* tend to occur only in the first syllable of an originally Turkish word. With few exceptions *ö* and *o* do not appear in suffixes.

Each originally Turkish word tends to have all its vowels of the same class, all front or all back. This phenomenon is called vowel harmony. Foreign words borrowed by Turkish, but not entirely assimilated into the language, do not always entirely conform to the principle of vowel harmony. (See Lesson 6, section 2.)

When a suffix is to be added to a word, the final vowel of the word determines the class of vowel (front or back) in that suffix. Therefore, the final vowel is called the dominant vowel. If still another suffix is to be added, the final vowel of the preceding suffix is considered the dominant vowel.

5. The plural

ev	(the) house	fil	(the) elephant
evler	(the) houses	filler	(the) elephants
dağ	(the) mountain	yıl	(the) year
dağlar	(the) mountains	yıllar	(the) years

göl	(the) lake	gün	(the) day
göller	(the) lakes	günler	(the) days
top	(the) ball	pul	(the) stamp
toplar	(the) balls	pullar	(the) stamps

The Turkish plural is formed by the addition to a noun of the plural suffix, which appears as *-ler* after a front dominant vowel (*e, i, ö, ü*) and as *-lar* after a back dominant vowel (*a, ı, o, u*). Thus the vowel of the plural suffix always conforms to the principle of vowel harmony.

The symbol V^2 denotes the variable vowel *e/a*. After a front dominant vowel V^2 is *e*; after a back dominant vowel, *a*. The plural suffix may be shown schematically as follows:

-l V^2 r

(In this notation, the hyphen indicates that what follows is a suffix, not a word. The hyphen is not written after the suffix, but suffixes may be added to other suffixes.)

DOMINANT VOWEL FRONT				DOMINANT VOWEL BACK			
ev	house	evler	houses	dağ	mountain	dağlar	mountains
fil	elephant	filler	elephants	yıl	year	yıllar	years
göl	lake	göller	lakes	top	ball	toplar	balls
gün	day	günler	days	pul	stamp	pullar	stamps

NOTE 1: Each noun in the above table, whether in its singular or plural form, is to be understood as being nominative or 'absolute' so long as it bears no other suffix; hence each may be understood with or without the English definite article, as the sense requires.

NOTE 2: A few writers and printers insert an apostrophe between a noun and its (first) suffix. This apostrophe does not alter the pronunciation. It is most frequently used after foreign words and after place-names.

The indefinite article of course has no plural.

bir ev a house **evler** houses (the houses)

A common word for 'some' is *bazı* (followed by a substantive with a plural suffix).

bir ev a house **bazı evler** some houses

Bazı may infrequently be used with the singular.

Bazı zaman sometimes

Bir may infrequently be used with the plural.

bir zamanlar once upon a time

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Bugün güzel.
2. Bu günler güzel.
3. Bu fincanlar çok küçük.
4. Kaç tane küçük fincan?
5. Kaç tane fincan küçük?
6. Bazı fincanlar çok büyük.
7. O fincanlar güzel.
8. Beş fincan iyi kahve.
9. Bu genç çocuk çok büyük.
10. Bu genç çok uzun.
11. Bu genç çocuklar çok küçük.
12. Bu gençler çok kısa.
13. Bu fincan büyük.
14. Bu büyük fincan güzel.
15. Bu fincanlar güzel.
16. Bu büyük fincanlar güzel.
17. Büyükler güzel.
18. Bu büyükler çok iyi.
19. Bu ev küçük.
20. Bu küçük ev güzel.
21. Bu küçük evler güzel.
22. Küçükler çok güzel.
23. Küçükler eski, büyükler yeni.
24. Kaç tane ev küçük?
25. Kaç tane küçük ev?

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. one horse
2. one big horse
3. a big horse
4. big horses
5. the big horses
6. two big horses
7. some big horses
8. Some horses are big.
9. This big horse is very good.
10. The other big horse is very bad.
11. The two big horses are beautiful.
12. These horses are small.
13. The big ones are very good; the little ones are bad.
14. two old women
15. the two old women
16. some old women
17. some old ones
18. This woman is old; the other woman is young.
19. The old ones are little.
20. The young ones are good-looking.
21. Fahrünnisa is young; Ahmet is very old.
22. This is good.
23. This one is good.
24. The little houses are old; the large houses are new.
25. The little ones are old; the large ones are new.

Lesson 5

Common Infinitive. Variable Consonants.

Past Definite Verb. Agreement of Subject and Verb

1. Gelmek çok kolay.	Coming (to come) (is) extremely easy.
2. Bilmek güç.	Comprehension (knowing, to know) (is) difficult.
3. Baktım.	I looked (stared).
4. Ben baktım.	I looked (stared).
5. Baktım baktım.	I looked hard (stared and stared).
6. Ben baktım baktım.	I stared and stared.
7. Ahmet geldi.	Ahmet came.
8. Geldi.	He (she, it) came.
9. Baktık.	We have stared. (We stared.)
10. Fahrünnisa gitti.	Fahrünnisa has gone (went).
11. Ahmet ve Mehmet geldiler.	Ahmet and Mehmet came (have come).
12. Onlar geldiler.	They have come (came).
13. Geldiler.	They've come (came).
14. Geldiler!	They're here! (They've come!)
15. Günler geçti.	(The) days (have) passed.

1. Common infinitive

The common or normal infinitive is formed by adding the suffix
-m V² k

to the simple verb. The simple verb (or 'naked' verb) is the singular imperative. (See Lesson 7, section 4.) The common infinitive is the verb form listed in a Turkish dictionary. Its meaning is rendered equally well in English,

in the case of the common infinitive *gelmek*, by 'coming' (noun) or by 'to come.'

Common infinitives:

DOMINANT VOWEL FRONT		DOMINANT VOWEL BACK	
gelmek	coming, to come	almak	taking, to take
bilmek	knowing, to know	kırmak	breaking, to break (transitive)
görmek	seeing, to see	olmak	becoming, happening, to become, to happen
gülmek	laughing, to laugh	bulmak	finding, to find

2. Variable consonants

As noted above, Turkish is an agglutinative language. It avoids prefixes. Every Turkish element which is affixed to a word (or to another element) is a suffix. When a suffix is added to a word (or to a preceding suffix), two sorts of consonant change may occur.

- The initial consonant of the newly added suffix may be altered.
- The final consonant of the preceding word (or suffix) may be altered.

Three variable consonants (or three consonant pairs) are involved in such changes. They are shown by these symbols:

t/d *p/b* *ç/c*

In each case, the first component of the symbol is a voiceless consonant (a consonant which is produced without vibration of the vocal cords). The second component is the corresponding voiced consonant. (A voiced consonant is produced with vibration of the vocal cords.) Turkish voiceless consonants are: *ç, f, h, k, p, s, t*. All other Turkish consonants are voiced.

CONSONANT CHANGES

Type 1: Initial consonant of newly added suffix changes.

When a suffix begins with the variable consonant *t/d* or with the variable consonant *ç/c* (no Turkish suffix begins with *p/b*), that initial variable consonant appears in its voiceless form when it is attached to a voiceless consonant, in its voiced form when it is attached to a directly preceding voiced sound (consonant or vowel).

süt	milk	sütçü	milkman
kahve	coffee	kahveci	coffeehouse keeper
ev	house	evde	in the house
ateş	fire	ateşte	in the fire

Type 2: Final consonant of preceding word (or suffix) changes.

When a word (or suffix) ends in one of the variable consonants, that final variable consonant appears in its voiceless form unless it is immediately followed by a suffixed vowel.

ağaç	(the) tree
ağaçta	in the tree
ağacı	the tree (objective definite)

NOTE 1: Many nouns of one syllable, and some nouns of more than one syllable, ending in *ç*, *p*, or *t*, do not change the final consonant to *c*, *b*, or *d* before an immediately suffixed vowel. Such instances are often indicated in dictionaries as: *top* (-*pu*) 'ball'; *et* (-*ti*) 'meat'; *sepet* (-*ti*) 'basket'; *üç* (-*çü*) 'three.'

NOTE 2: The consonant change in verb stems occurs only in a limited number of verbs. *Gitmek* (*gid-*), and *etmek* (*ed-*) are the only prominent examples in which the shift does occur.

3. Past definite verb

The past definite verb forms denote action which really was or really has been completed in the past. The past definite forms are obtained by adding to the verb stem (the 'naked' verb, the common infinitive minus its suffix, -m V² k) the following endings.

SINGULAR		PLURAL
1st person	-t/d V ⁴ m	-t/d V ⁴ k
2nd person	-t/d V ⁴ n	-t/d V ⁴ n V ⁴ z
3rd person	-t/d V ⁴	-t/d V ⁴ l V ² r

The symbol V⁴ represents the four-variable vowel shown in the following table.

FRONT		BACK	
When dominant vowel is		When dominant vowel is	
<i>e</i> or <i>i</i>	V ⁴ = <i>i</i>	<i>a</i> or <i>ı</i>	V ⁴ = <i>ı</i>
<i>ö</i> or <i>ü</i>	V ⁴ = <i>ü</i>	<i>o</i> or <i>u</i>	V ⁴ = <i>u</i>

The symbol -t/d indicates that these suffixes begin with a variable consonant.

Study the verbs whose past definite forms are given below.

VERBS WHOSE DOMINANT VOWEL IS *a*

	verb stem ends in		
	VOICED CONSONANT	VOICELESS CONSONANT	VOWEL (VOICED)
common infinitive	almak	bakmak	anlamak
verb stem	al	bak	anla
meaning	taking, to take	looking, to look	understanding, to understand

singular

1st person	aldım	baktım	anladım
2nd person	aldın	baktın	anladın
3rd person	aldı	baktı	anladı

plural

1st person	aldık	baktık	anladık
2nd person	aldınız	baktınız	anladınız
3rd person	aldılar	baktılar	anladılar

All past definite forms express action that really is finished, really was or has been completed in the past. Hence the first person singular past definite of *almak*, the form *aldım* (of the verb which means 'taking,' 'getting possession of,' 'receiving,' 'acquiring') may mean any or all of the following, depending upon the particular context in which *aldım* is used.

I took	I got	I received
I did take	I did get	I did receive
I have taken	I have got	I have received

In the same way, the second singular form, *aldın*, means that you (one person) really did complete or have completed the action of taking, getting, receiving, acquiring something. Among possible translations for *aldın* are:

- you (singular) took
- you (singular) did take
- you (singular) have taken

and so on for the words 'get,' 'acquire,' etc. The verb *satın almak* means 'to buy.'

NOTE SECOND PERSON SINGULAR AND PLURAL

The second person singular is used:

- a. when speaking to a child or an inferior
- b. as a token of familiarity or affection when speaking to an intimate
- c. rudely as an insult to an individual
- d. solemnly when addressing God or invoking a person who is dead

The second person plural is used:

- a. when speaking to more than one person
- b. as the normal, polite way to address one individual.

In the absence of an expressed subject, the third person singular form, *aldı*, is assumed to have for its subject the pronoun *o* 'he,' 'she,' or 'it.'

Aldı. He (she, it) took (did take, has taken something), or He (she, it) got (did get, has gotten something), or the same shades of past definite meaning for the verb 'acquire.'

Aldı may of course have an expressed subject. *Ahmet aldı*. 'Ahmet got, took, received,' etc.

The first plural past definite form, *aldık*, not only rings all the changes noted above ('we really did take, have taken,' etc.). In addition, since the first person plural is frequently used to mean 'I' (a sort of polite and modest editorial 'we'), the word *aldık* may also, if the context requires, express all the meanings given above for the first singular form, *aldım*.

Aldınız indicates that you (one or more persons [see the note above]) in the past definitely did perform or have performed the action of *almak*—taking, getting, acquiring, etc.

Aldılar shows that they (two or more persons) really did perform or have performed that action.

The second verb in the table—*bakmak*—expresses the action of looking, staring, and (with proper suffixes on the substantives concerned) of looking after, caring for, examining, etc. Thus *baktım baktım* (Turkish repeats words for emphasis) means

I looked and looked.

I did look and look.

I have looked and looked.

etc.

The third verb—*anlamak*—expresses the idea of comprehending, understanding, catching on, getting the point, etc. Thus its third plural past definite form, *anladılar*, may mean any of the following

They really did understand, realize, comprehend, etc.

have understood, etc.

understood, etc.

NOTE: For *almak*, *bakmak*, *anlamak*, and indeed for most Turkish verbs, it is very misleading to try to give one English word which is what the Turkish word 'means.' Instead, the student should attach to the Turkish verb, or noun, or adjective a basic idea which has many possible shades of expression in English.

Each of the three verbs in the above table has the dominant vowel *a*: *almak* with a final voiced consonant (*al*), *bakmak* with a final voiceless consonant (*bak*), and *anlamak* (*anla*), with a vowel, which is also a voiced sound.

Here follow verbs whose dominant vowels are *e*, *ı*, *i*, *u*, *ü*, *o*, and *ö*. These tables are not complete: no exotic verbs are introduced simply for the sake of completion.

VERBS WHOSE DOMINANT VOWEL IS *e*

	VOICED CONSONANT	VOICELESS CONSONANT	verb stem ends in VOWEL (VOICED)
common infinitive	<i>gelmek</i>	<i>çekmek</i>	<i>istemek</i>
verb stem	<i>gel</i>	<i>çek</i>	<i>iste</i>
meaning	coming, to come	pulling, to pull	wishing, wanting, needing, requiring, etc. to need
singular			
1st person	<i>geldim</i>	<i>çektim</i>	<i>istedim</i>
2nd person	<i>geldin</i>	<i>çektin</i>	<i>istedin</i>
3rd person	<i>geldi</i>	<i>çekti</i>	<i>istedi</i>
plural			
1st person	<i>geldik</i>	<i>çektik</i>	<i>istedik</i>
2nd person	<i>geldiniz</i>	<i>çektiniz</i>	<i>istediniz</i>
3rd person	<i>geldiler</i>	<i>çektiler</i>	<i>istediler</i>

VERBS WHOSE DOMINANT VOWEL IS *i*

common infinitive	<i>kırmak</i>	<i>bıkmak</i>
verb stem	<i>kır</i>	<i>bık</i>
meaning	breaking, to break (trans.)	get tired of, have enough of, to tire of
singular		
1st person	<i>kırdım</i>	<i>bıktım</i>
2nd person	<i>kırdın</i>	<i>bıktın</i>
3rd person	<i>kırdı</i>	<i>bıktı</i>
plural		
1st person	<i>kırdık</i>	<i>bıktık</i>
2nd person	<i>kırdınız</i>	<i>bıktınız</i>
3rd person	<i>kırdılar</i>	<i>bıktılar</i>

VERBS WHOSE DOMINANT VOWEL IS *i*

common infinitive	<i>bilmek</i>	<i>itmek</i>
verb stem	<i>bil</i>	<i>it</i>
meaning	knowing, to know	pushing, to push

singular

1st person	bildim	ittim
2nd person	bildin	ittin
3rd person	bildi	itti

plural

1st person	bildik	ittik
2nd person	bildiniz	ittiniz
3rd person	bildiler	ittiler

VERBS WHOSE DOMINANT VOWEL IS *o*

common infinitive	<i>olmak</i>	<i>koşmak</i>
verb stem	<i>ol</i>	<i>koş</i>
meaning	becoming, happening, to become, to happen	running, to run

singular

1st person	oldum	koştum
2nd person	oldun	koştun
3rd person	oldu	koştı

plural

1st person	olduk	koştuk
2nd person	oldunuz	koştunuz
3rd person	oldular	koştular

VERBS WHOSE DOMINANT VOWEL IS *ö*

common infinitive	<i>görmek</i>	<i>öpmek</i>
verb stem	<i>gör</i>	<i>öp</i>
meaning	seeing, perceiving, to see, to perceive	kissing, to kiss

singular

1st person	gördüm	öptüm
2nd person	gördün	öptün
3rd person	gördü	öptü

plural

1st person	gördük	öptük
2nd person	gördünüz	öptünüz
3rd person	gördüler	öptüler

VERBS WHOSE DOMINANT VOWEL IS *u*

common infinitive	<i>bulmak</i>	<i>tutmak</i>	<i>okumak</i>
verb stem	<i>bul</i>	<i>tut</i>	<i>oku</i>
meaning	finding, to find	grasping, holding, to grasp, to hold	reading, to read
singular			
1st person	buldum	tuttum	okudum
2nd person	buldun	tuttun	okudun
3rd person	buldu	tuttu	okudu
plural			
1st person	bulduk	tuttuk	okuduk
2nd person	buldunuz	tuttunuz	okudunuz
3rd person	buldular	tuttular	okudular

VERBS WHOSE DOMINANT VOWEL IS *ü*

common infinitive	<i>gülmek</i>	<i>yürümek</i>
verb stem	<i>gül</i>	<i>yürü</i>
meaning	laughing, to laugh	walking, to walk
singular		
1st person	güldüm	yürüdüm
2nd person	güldün	yürüdün
3rd person	güldü	yürüdü
plural		
1st person	güldük	yürüdük
2nd person	güldünüz	yürüdünüz
3rd person	güldüler	yürüdüler

4. Agreement of subject and verb

Verb and subject agree in person and number. When the subject is a personal pronoun, the pronoun is not used unless special emphasis is desired.

normal expression	<i>Geldim.</i>	I came.
	<i>Gördünüz.</i>	You saw.
for emphasis	<i>Ben geldim.</i>	I came.
	<i>Siz gördünüz.</i>	You saw

With a third person plural subject which refers to animate beings, especially to humans, the verb is almost always in the third plural form, but may be third singular form.

Ahmet ve Mehmet geldiler.
Gençler koştular.

Ahmet and Mehmet came.
The youths ran.

Rarely

Ahmet ve Mehmet geldi.
Gençler koştu.

Ahmet and Mehmet came.
The youths ran.

In the case of a third plural subject which does not refer to animate beings, especially to humans, the situation is reversed: the verb usually is in the third singular form, but may be third plural form.

Günler geçti.
Atlar koştu.

(The) days passed.
The horses ran.

Sometimes

Atlar koştular.

The horses ran.

NOTE: Any of the above past definite forms may, of course, express any shade of action which really was, or has been, completed in the past. See Lesson 5, section 3.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Kim geldi? | 15. Akdeniz büyük, Marmara Denizi küçük. |
| 2. Ne zaman geldiniz? | 16. Ev güzel bahçe büyük. |
| 3. Çok okudular. | 17. Gençler bugün geldiler. |
| 4. Az okudun. | 18. Beş genç güldüler. |
| 5. Çok az anladım. | 19. Bu çocuk çok genç. |
| 6. Az anladık. | 20. Genç kız koştu. |
| 7. Çocuklar çok koştular. | 21. İki büyük göz |
| 8. İki çocuk bu sabah geldiler. | 22. İki göz büyük. |
| 9. Bu kahve çok iyi. | 23. Bu göz büyük; o göz küçük. |
| 10. Bir buçuk kilo kahve satın aldım. | 24. Bu ne? |
| 11. Kim güldü? | 25. Bu bir elma. |
| 12. Erdoğan çok güldü. | 26. Kaç litre süt? |
| 13. Kaç defa geldiniz? | 27. İki buçuk fincan süt |
| 14. İstanbul büyük ve güzel bir şehir. | 28. Onlar kim? |
| | 29. Onlar Sait ve Ali. |

30. Kim anladı?
31. Onlar anladılar.
32. Bu evler büyük.
33. Bunlar büyük.
34. Büyükler bu sabah geldiler.
35. Gençler bu akşam geldiler.
36. Meyvalar oldu.
37. Ahmet gelmek istedi.
38. Ahmet, ne zaman geldin?
39. Bu sabah geldim.
40. Çocuklar biraz okudular.

41. Ne istediler?
42. Kaç otomobil gördünüz?
43. Beş otomobil gördüm.
44. Ne oldu?
45. İyi çocuklar
46. Ne zaman geldin?
47. Gençler koştular.
48. Ne buldunuz?
49. İki iyi çocuk
50. Ne okudular?

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. a big boy
2. The boy is big.
3. four little girls
4. The four girls are little.
5. five pretty little girls
6. These five little girls are pretty.
7. three big bad boys
8. A bad boy came this morning.
9. The bad boy came this morning.
10. Who came?
11. When did Ahmet come?
12. two kilos of oranges
13. two kilos of good oranges
14. These two kilos of oranges are very good.
15. The apples are very good; the oranges are bad.
16. Süheylâ has read much.
17. We took very little.
18. This city is very large.
19. The sea and mountains are lovely.
20. The street is big; the mosque is small.
21. When did they come?
22. How many apples did Ahmet want?
23. He wanted seven apples.
24. How many spoons of sugar?
25. How many slices of bread?

Lesson 6

Verbs of the Type *Gitmek* (*Gider*).

Objective Definite

1. Geldi gitti.	He's come (and) gone. (He came [and] went.)
2. İstanbulu gördük.	We've seen (been to) Istanbul.
3. Kahveyi bu sabah satın aldım.	I bought the coffee this morning.
4. Ahmedî dün gördüm.	I saw Ahmet yesterday.
5. Köpek güzel.	The dog's a fine one.
6. Köpeği kim gördü?	Who's seen the dog?
7. Ben dün bir köpek gördüm.	I saw a dog yesterday.
8. Yalnız o adamı gördünüz.	You saw only that man.
9. Sizi gördüler.	They saw you.
10. Kaç kilo şeker aldı?	How many kilos of sugar did he (or she) buy?

1. Verbs of the type *gitmek* (*gider*)

A few verbs—of which *gitmek* (*gider*), 'to go,' and *etmek* (*eder*), the auxiliary verb meaning 'to do,' are the most important—have stems which end in the variable consonant *t/d* (for *gitmek*, the stem is *git* or *gid*; for *etmek*, *et* or *ed*).

When a suffix whose own initial sound is also a variable consonant is added to a verb stem of this limited type, both the final variable consonant of the verb stem and also the initial variable consonant of the suffix appear in their voiceless forms.

A case in point is the past definite. The forms for *gitmek* and *etmek* are singular

1st person	ettim	gittim	I went, did go, have gone, etc.
2nd person	ettin	gittin	
3rd person	etti	gitti	

plural

1st person	ettik	gittik
2nd person	ettiniz	gittiniz
3rd person	ettiler	gittiler

When, however, to a verb stem of this type there is added a suffix whose initial sound is a vowel, the final variable consonant of the verb stem appears in its voiced form. The third singular form of the general verb (see Lesson 11, section 2) illustrates this variation, e.g., for *gitmek*, the third singular general is *gider*; for *etmek*, it is *eder*.

Verbs of the type *gitmek* (*gider*) are sometimes shown in dictionaries by indicating the third singular general form in parentheses, after the common infinitive.

2. The objective definite

The objective definite suffix has a double function. It simultaneously indicates (a) that the substantive to which it is attached is the direct object of a verb, and (b) that the same substantive is definite. (A substantive is definite when it is the proper name of a person, place, or thing, or when, in English, the corresponding word is preceded by 'the,' a word indicating possession, or by a demonstrative adjective.) Unless the substantive in question meets the second of these conditions (i.e., is definite), it does not take this suffix, even though it is the direct object of a verb.

Hence, the objective suffix can be called a definite article that is used only with the objective. When attached to a word that ends in a consonant, this suffix is simply the variable vowel V^4 , (*i*, *ı*, *ü*, *u*). When this suffix is attached to a word that ends in a vowel, however, a consonant buffer is needed between the word's terminal vowel and the V^4 of the suffix because Turkish abhors the sequence vowel-vowel (see Lesson 1, section 5). With the objective definite suffix, the buffer consonant employed is *y*. Hence the full notation for the objective definite suffix is

-(y) V^4

(In this notation, the hyphen shows that what follows is a suffix; the parentheses show that the *y* is a buffer consonant, employed only when it is needed; and the symbol V^4 indicates the four-variable vowel *i-ı-ü-u*.)

ABSOLUTE FORM

(The substantive may be (a) subject, definite or indefinite; or (b) object, indefinite.)

gece	night
geceler	
ev	house
evler	
efendi	gentleman, sir
efendiler	
fil	elephant
filler	
Mösyö	Monsieur
Mösyöler	
göl	lake
göller	
sözcü	spokesman
sözcüler	
gün	day
günler	
baba	father
babalar	
dağ	mountain
dağlar	
halı	rug
halılar	
yıl	year
yıllar	
bando	band (musical)
bandolar	
top	ball
toplar	
kutu	box
kutular	
pul	stamp
pullar	

OBJECTIVE DEFINITE FORM

(The substantive is both (a) object and also (b) definite.)

geceyi
geceleri
evi
evleri
efendiyi
efendileri
fili
filleri
Mösyüyü
Mösyöleri
gölü
göllerini
sözcüyü
sözcülerini
günü
günleri
babayı
babalarını
dağı
dağlarını
halıyı
halılarını
yılı
yıllarını
bandoyu
bandolarını
topu
toplarını
kutuyu
kutularını
pulu
pullarını

The sequence in which suffixes are added must always be learned by observation. In this case, for example, the plural suffix precedes the objective definite suffix. The objective definite is frequently used where English does not

use a definite article (although English does, in these instances, convey the idea of definiteness).

<i>İzmiri gördük.</i>	We have seen İzmir.
<i>Bizi gördüler.</i>	They saw us.

Many words in common use (but not of Turkish origin) do not conform to vowel harmony, but are followed by front-voweled suffixes despite the presence of the back dominant vowel. This is sometimes shown in dictionaries in the following manner:

saat (saati)	hour, time; watch, clock
hal (hali)	circumstance, situation, condition

The form in parentheses is the objective definite.

3. Variable consonants followed by objective definite

In the case of words which end in a *ç*, *p*, or *t*, the terminal consonant of some nouns of one syllable and most nouns of more than one syllable assumes its voiced form before any immediately following vowel (see Lesson 5, section 2). This holds true with the objective definite suffix.

ABSOLUTE FORM		OBJECTIVE DEFINITE FORM
Ahmet	man's name	Ahmedi
Ahmetler		Ahmetleri
Mehmet	man's name	Mehmedi
Mehmetler		Mehmetleri
sahip	owner, master	sahibi
sahipler		sahipleri
ağaç	tree	ağacı
ağaçlar		ağaçları
dört	four	dördü
dörtler		dörtleri

Such words are shown in dictionaries with the objective definite form in parentheses, following the absolute form.

<i>dört (dördü)</i>	four	<i>sahip (sahibi)</i>	owner, master
---------------------	------	-----------------------	---------------

4. Doubled consonants followed by objective definite

Some originally non-Turkish words that in the original language end in a doubled consonant—for example, the Arabic word ‘*haqq*’—in their Turkish

guise tend to drop the second consonant except when a vowel is directly suffixed. In that event, the doubled consonant reappears.

hak (*hakkı*) right, truth; God

5. 'Ayn followed by objective definite

Many words which Turkish has borrowed from Arabic contained—in the original Arabic form—the characteristic Semitic consonant 'ayn (ع). If any trace of the sound of this consonant remains in modern Turkish pronunciation, it is simply a full stop in the breath.

Turkish spelling does not indicate an original initial 'ayn.

Ali, man's name (Arabic 'Alī)

Turkish spelling may or may not indicate an original medial 'ayn.

sanat or *san'at* 'art,' 'craft' (Arabic 'san'ah')

Of these two possibilities, the first (*sanat*) may be pronounced with no stop in the breath; the second (*san'at*), with a full stop, indicated by the apostrophe.

Turkish spelling (and pronunciation) may or may not indicate an original final 'ayn. This is especially true when a vowel is directly suffixed to the word in question. *Cami* 'mosque' with the objective definite may appear as *camii* or as *camiyi*.

6. Final *k* followed by objective definite

Polysyllables in final *k* 'soften' that *k* to a *ğ* before an immediately suffixed vowel.

köpek (köpeği)	dog
elektrik (elektriği)	electricity
ayak (ayağı)	foot
bardak (bardağı)	drinking glass

Most monosyllables in final *k* do not soften the *k* to a *ğ* before an immediately following vowel.

ok (**oku**) arrow

The word *çok* is an exception.

çok (**çoğu**) much, many; lots (of)

7. Nouns of the type *oğul* (*oğlu*) followed by objective definite

Although Turkish admits a syllable of the pattern VCC (see Lesson 1, section 6), it frequently prefers to avoid the sequence consonant-consonant

at the end of the final syllable of a substantive. Hence several nouns—some of them originally Turkish (*oğul* ‘son’) and some of them borrowed (*şehir* ‘city’ from Persian ‘shahr’)—whose absolute pattern would end with VCC, insert an ‘unstable’ vowel between the two final consonants. When an immediately following vowel is suffixed, however, the ‘unstable’ vowel drops out.

ABSOLUTE FORM		OBJECTIVE DEFINITE FORM
<i>oğul</i>	son	<i>oğlu</i>
<i>oğullar</i>		<i>oğulları</i>
<i>şehir</i>	city	<i>şehri</i>
<i>şehirler</i>		<i>şehirleri</i>

Nouns of the type *oğul* (*oğlu*) are so indicated in dictionaries.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Parayı kim aldı?
Parayı Ahmet aldı.
Onu Ahmet aldı.
2. Parayı kim aldı?
Ahmet aldı.
Onu ne zaman aldı?
Parayı bu sabah aldı.
Onu bu sabah aldı.
Bu sabah aldı.
3. Mehmet, Ahmedî ne zaman gördünüz?
Ahmedî bugün gördüm.
Bugün gördüm.
4. Çocuklar! Bugün kimi gördünüz?
Bugün bir kaç adam gördük.
5. Bu iki adamı kim gördü?
Onları biz gördük.
6. Bu küçük kız ne kırdı?
Bir fincan kırdı.
7. Fincanları kim kırdı?
Fincanları küçük kız kırdı.
Onları küçük kız kırdı.
8. Kız fincanları ne zaman kırdı?
Onları bu sabah kırdı.
9. Küçük kız kaç tane fincan kırdı?
İki tane fincan kırdı.
İki tane kırdı.
10. Köpek neyi gördü?
Köpek kediyi gördü.
Kedi koştu.
11. Kedi ne istedi?
Kedi süt istedi.
Kedi neyi buldu?
Kedi sütü buldu.
12. Bu beş bardağı kim aldı?
Onları ben aldım.
Bardakları ne zaman aldınız?
Bardakları bu akşam aldım.
13. Bu dağlar çok güzel.
Güzel dağları gördüler.
Bazı güzel dağlar gördüler.
14. Ahmet, ne zaman geldin?
Bu sabah geldim.
Ahmet ne zaman geldi?
Bu sabah geldi.

15. Mehmet ve Sait dün
geldiler.
Dün kim geldi?
Dün onlar geldiler.
16. Onu kim anladı?
Onu ben anladım.
17. Geç geldiniz, Ahmet!
Evet, çok geç geldim.

18. İstanbul büyük bir şehir.
İstanbulu kim gördü?
Onu biz gördük.
19. O çocuklar çok küçük.
Ne zaman gittiler?
Küçükler bu sabah gittiler.
20. Hoş geldiniz, Ahmet!
Hoş bulduk, Mehmet!

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. I read the book yesterday.
2. I read two books yesterday.
3. Who has read this book?
4. You went yesterday.
5. Welcome, Fahrünnisa!
6. Thank you, I'm glad to be
here, Selma!

7. Mehmet wanted some
money.
8. How much money did
Mehmet want?
9. Who wanted the money?
10. I found the two liras.

Lesson 7

Personal Pronouns. Interrogative Pronouns.
Demonstratives. The Imperative. Word Order

-
- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Gel! Bunu al! | Come here! Take this! (to one person, speaking most familiarly) |
| 2. Gelin! Bunu alın! | Come here! Take this! (to one person, speaking less familiarly than above) |
| 3. Geliniz! Bunu alınız! | Come here! Take this! (to one person, speaking formally, or to more than one person) |
| 4. Gelsin! Bunu alsın! | Let him (her, it) come here! Let him (her, it) take this! (If only he would . . . I wish that he would . . . It would be a good thing if he would . . . , etc.) |
| 5. Gelsinler! Bunu alsınlar! | If only they would come (and) take this! Let them come! Let them take this! |
| 6. Ben sizi gördüm, siz onları gördünüz. | I saw you and you saw them. |
| 7. Sizi ben gördüm, onları siz gördünüz. | I saw you and <i>you</i> saw them. |
-

1. Personal pronouns

ABSOLUTE (NOMINATIVE) FORM		OBJECTIVE DEFINITE FORM
singular		
1st person	ben	beni

2nd person	sen	seni
3rd person	o	onu
plural		
1st person	biz	bizi
2nd person	siz	sizi
3rd person	onlar	onları

Note that the buffer consonant with the third singular is *n* rather than the usual *y*, and that *n* precedes the plural suffix in the third plural forms.

Sometimes a plural suffix is used with the first and second plural forms.

bizler we *sizler* you

2. Interrogative pronouns

ABSOLUTE FORM		OBJECTIVE DEFINITE FORM
kim? who?		kimi? whom?
ne? what?		neyi? what?

These words sometimes take plural suffixes.

kimler *neler*

NOTE 1: *Ne* is sometimes an adjective.

ne zaman? when? (what time?)

NOTE 2: *Ne* is sometimes exclamatory.

ne güzel! how lovely!

3. Demonstratives

	ABSOLUTE FORM		OBJECTIVE DEFINITE FORM
singular			
1st person	bu	this	bunu
2nd person	şu	that	şunu
3rd person	o	that	onu
plural			
1st person	bunlar	these	bunları
2nd person	şunlar	those	şunları
3rd person	onlar	those	onları

Note that *o* 'that' is the same as *o* 'he,' 'she,' 'it.'

The basic distinction between *şu* 'that' and *o* 'that' is:

şu refers to some thing, person, etc., that, although at some distance

from the speaker, is still within sight and can be indicated by a gesture;
o refers to some thing, person, etc., that is usually not in sight;
şu frequently means 'the following,' 'as follows.'

The demonstratives are adjectives when they modify a following noun, pronouns when used alone. As adjectives they take no suffixes. As pronouns they take suffixes. (Note the buffer *n*.)

From the demonstratives are formed the words

böyle	in this fashion, thus
şöyle	in that fashion, as follows
öyle	in that fashion

These words may be used adverbially or adjectivally.

Böyle oldu.	It happened in this fashion.
böyle bir gün	a day like this

4. The imperative

The Turkish imperative includes two persons.

- the second person, singular and plural, the individual (or individuals) to whom one gives a command. '(you) come here!'
- the third person, singular and plural, the individual or individuals about whom a sort of command is given. 'Let him come!' 'Let them take!'

'Please' is *lûtfen*.

The imperative suffixes are

singular

2nd person, Form I	verb stem without suffix
2nd person, Form II	verb stem plus (y) V ⁴ n
3rd person	verb stem plus s V ⁴ n

plural

2nd person	verb stem plus (y) V ⁴ n V ⁴ z
3rd person	verb stem plus s V ⁴ n l V ² r

<i>gelmek</i>	<i>almak</i>	<i>gitmek</i>	<i>istemek</i>
to come	to take	to go	to want, wish

singular

2nd person, Form I	gel	al	git	iste
2nd person, Form II	gelin	alın	gidin	isteyin
3rd person	gelsin	alsın	gitsin	istesin

plural

2nd person

3rd person

geliniz

gelsinler

alınız

alsınlar

gidiniz

gitsinler

isteyiniz

istesinler

The use of the second person singular and of the second plural has been presented (see Lesson 5, section 3).

In the second singular imperative, Form I (the simple verb stem) is ordinarily used. Form II (with the suffix $-(y) V^4 n$) expresses a degree of politeness between the familiar Form I and the formal second plural. It is not frequently used, the second plural imperative or the second plural general (aorist) are preferred instead (see Lesson 11, section 2).

5. Word order

Word order in a formal Turkish sentence usually is

- subject (unless the subject is an unexpressed personal pronoun)
- object or complement (a pronoun object whose sense is clear is often left out where English would always express the object)
- verb.

When the sentence includes an indirect object (shown by the dative suffix: see Lesson 8, section 2), the indirect object may precede or follow the direct object.

Generally speaking, the word immediately before the verb is the word whose position in the sentence gives it the greatest importance.

A comma frequently follows the subject.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

- Ahmet otomobili aldı.
- Otomobili Ahmet aldı.
- Beni kim gördü?
- Seni istediler.
- Şu kitabı okudum fakat siz bunu okudunuz.
- Büyük camii gördük.
(Büyük camiye gördük.)
- Kimi istediler?
- Mehmet, bak bak!
Ahmet geldi.
- Lütfen, bu meyveyı alınız.
- Kahveyi iç!
- Gel, Mehmet!
Ahmet bir şey kırdı.
- Bunu anlamak çok güç.
- Bizi kaç defa gördünüz?
- Onlar ne zaman geldiler?
- Onları bulunuz.
- Dün bildin.
- Böyle bir şeyi kim istedi?
- Gittim, gördüm, geldim.

19. Bu kitabı bugün okuyunuz,
lûtfen.

20. Çabuk gelsinler!

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Find it!
2. Laugh!
3. He saw me and I saw him.
4. Let them come!
5. These are big.
6. I have seen Izmir and
Eskişehir.
7. The big ones are these.
8. The boy came yesterday.

9. They went this week.
10. This month is very lovely.
11. He wanted 15 liras and
35 kuruş.
12. I received the 15 liras
yesterday.
13. They bought two big rugs.
14. This is very difficult.
15. These things are very easy.

Lesson 8

*Nere**, *Bura**, *Ora**. Dative, Locative, and Ablative.
Fractions. Calendar. The Word -d V²

- | | |
|----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. Parayı nerede buldunuz? | Where did you find the money? |
| 2. Kutuda buldum. | I found (it) in the box. |
| 3. Parayı kime verdiniz? | To whom did you give the money? |
| 4. Onu Ahmede verdim. | I gave it to Ahmet. |
| 5. Parayı kimden aldınız? | From whom did you get the money? |
| 6. Mehmetten aldık. | We got it from Mehmet. |
-

1. *Nere**, *Bura**, *Ora**

In the English sentences

- | a. | b. | c. |
|----------------------|----------------|-------------------------|
| Where are you going? | Where is she? | Where did he come from? |
| I went there. | We were there. | He came from there. |
| They came here. | He is here. | They left here. |

each of the words 'where,' 'there,' and 'here' expresses three distinct ideas.

- a. place towards which b. place in which c. place from which

In Turkish, these three distinct ideas are indicated by distinct suffixes (the dative, locative, and ablative suffixes), and the three Turkish words *nere** 'where?' (interrogative), *bura** 'here,' 'this place,' and *ora** 'there,' 'that place' themselves take those suffixes.

The asterisks with *nere**, *bura**, and *ora** indicate that the absolute forms (the forms with no suffix) of these words do not occur in modern literary Turkish.

2. Dative suffix -(y) V²

The suffix -(y) V² denotes motion toward a point, motion through space or motion through time.

When it is attached to a word which ends in a variable consonant, that consonant assumes its voiced form.

ağaç	(the) tree	ağaca	to (the) tree
ağaçlar	(the) trees	ağaçlara	to (the) trees

In polysyllables, the dative suffix 'softens' a final *k* to *ğ*.

çocuk	(the) child	çocuğa	to (the) child
çocuklar	(the) children	çocuklara	to (the) children

With such verbs as *vermek* 'to give,' the dative suffix expresses the indirect object.

Kutuyu Ahmede verdi. He gave the box to Ahmet.

The dative suffix also denotes the recipient of the action of many verbs.

Ona güldü.	He laughed at it.
<i>gülmek</i>	to laugh, laugh at (with dative)
Bize baktılar.	They looked at us. They looked after us.
<i>bakmak</i>	to look at (with dative), to look after (with dative)

Verbs which govern a dative suffix on a preceding substantive are so noted in some dictionaries.

Another common function of the dative suffix is to express cause.

neye, alternative and more common form: **niye** for what? why?

3. Locative suffix -t/d V²

This suffix -t/d V² denotes location at a point, a point in space or in time. When it is attached to a word ending in a variable consonant, that final variable consonant assumes its voiceless form as does the initial variable consonant of the suffix.

ağaç	(the) tree
ağaçta	at (the) tree
	in (the) tree
ağaçlar	(the) trees
ağaçlarda	in (the) trees
	at (the) trees

4. Ablative suffix -t/d V² n

This suffix -t/d V² n denotes motion away from a point, a point in space or in time. It affects a preceding variable consonant as does the locative suffix.

ağaç	(the) tree
ağaçtan	from (the) tree
ağaçlar	(the) trees
ağaçlardan	from (the) trees

Principal meanings of the ablative suffix include

a. cause

ondan	from that, because of that, therefore
neden	from what? why?

b. composition

taştan	from stone (<i>taş</i>), made out of stone
taştan bir ev	a stone house

c. the agent of the passive (see Lesson 21, section 2)

d. comparison (see Lesson 12, section 4)

- e. the recipient of the action of such verbs as *bahsetmek* (the auxiliary verb *etmek* 'to do,' may be written as an enclitic, especially after a monosyllable), 'to speak of, about' (with ablative), 'to discuss' with ablative). Verbs which govern an ablative suffix on a preceding substantive are so noted in some dictionaries.

Onlardan çok bahsettik.	We talked a lot about them.
	We discussed them at length.

f. an adverbial sense

eskiiden	of old, in olden times, formerly
-----------------	-------------------------------------

Note such expressions as

birdenbire	suddenly (lit. 'from one to one')
doğrudan doğruya	directly, straightaway (lit. 'from straight to straight')

5. Dative, locative, and ablative forms of *nere**, *bura**, *ora**, the personal pronouns, the interrogatives, and the demonstratives *nere**, *bura**, *ora**, *şura**

nere*	what place?	nerede	at what place
nereye	to where?	nereden	from where?

bura*	this place	orada	at that place
buraya	to here	oradan	from there
burada	at this place	şura*	that place
buradan	from here	şuraya	to there
ora*	that place	şurada	at that place
oraya	to there	şuradan	from there

The above words sometimes take the plural suffix, e.g., *buralarda* 'in these parts.'

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

ben	I	siz	you (plural)
bana	to me	size	
bende	at (or) with me	sizde	
benden	from me	sizden	
biz	we	o	he, she, it; that
bize	to us	ona	
bizde	at (or) with us	onda	
bizden	from us	ondan	
sen	you (singular)	onlar	they
sana		onlara	
sende		onlarda	
senden		onlardan	

DEMONSTRATIVES

bu	this	şu	that
buna		şuna	
bunda		şunda	
bundan		şundan	
bunlar	these	şunlar	those
bunlara		şunlara	
bunlarda		şunlarda	
bunlardan		şunlardan	

INTERROGATIVES

kim	who ?	ne	what ?
kime		neye, niye	
kimde		nede	
kimden		neden	
kimler		neler	
kimlere		nelere	
kimlerde		nelerde	
kimlerden		nelerden	

6. Fractions

The locative is used in expressing fractions.

3te 2 (üçte iki)	2/3, in three, two
100de 15 (yüzde on beş)	15/100, 15 percent
yüzde yüz	100 percent

In addition to *dörtte bir* 'one fourth,' one may in certain situations use the word *çeyrek*, 'quarter.'

bir çeyrek saat	a quarter of an hour
-----------------	----------------------

7. Calendar

The days of the week are

Pazar	Sunday	Perşembe	Thursday
Pazartesi	Monday	Cuma	Friday
Salı	Tuesday	Cumartesi	Saturday
Çarşamba	Wednesday		

The names of the days are usually used in the possessive construction with the noun *gün* 'day' (see Lesson 10).

Pazar günü	Monday	Salı günü	Wednesday
Pazartesi günü	Tuesday		etc.

The months of the year are

Ocak	January (older terms are <i>İkinci Kânun</i> and <i>Son Kânun</i>)	Ekim	October (older terms are <i>Birinci Teşrin</i> and <i>İlk Teşrin</i>)
Şubat	February	Kasım	November (older terms are <i>İkinci</i> <i>Teşrin</i> and <i>Son Teşrin</i>)
Mart	March		
Nisan	April		
Mayıs	May		
Haziran	June	Aralık	December (older terms are <i>Birinci</i> <i>Kânun</i> and <i>İlk Kânun</i>)
Temmuz	July		
Ağustos	August		
Eylül	September		

Nouns of time such as those above are often used absolutely (i.e., with no suffixes).

Salı günü	on Tuesday
bu ay	this month

8. The word d V²

This word must be distinguished from the locative suffix (-t/d V²; see Lesson 8, section 3).

The word d V² ('also,' 'too,' 'for X's part,' 'in X's turn'), although it is an independent word, conforms in vowel harmony to the preceding word.

Erdoğan da geldi.	Erdoğan came, too.
evde de	also in the house
garajlarda da	in (the) garages, too.

Repeated, d V² means 'both . . . and'

sana da bana da	to both you and me
senden de benden de	from both you and me

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Dün sabah Ankaradan kaç kişi geldi?

Beş kişi geldi.

Nereden geldiler?

Ankaradan.

Ahmet ve Mehmet de geldiler.

Evet, onlar da geldiler.

2. Bu halılar çok güzel, Ali.

Evet, çok güzel.

Onları nerede buldunuz?

Onları İstanbul'da buldum.

Nerede?

Kapalıçarşıda.

Onları kaçta aldınız?

Büyük halıya 500 lira verdim.

3. Salı günü Ahmet Bey İstanbul'a geldi. Kapalıçarşıya gitti. Orada çok şey gördü. İki güzel halı satın aldı. Sonra Taksim'e gitti. O akşam Taksim'de bir otelde kaldı. Çarşamba sabah saat sekizde İstanbul'dan Ankaraya döndü.

4. Kız dün İzmir'e gitti.

5. Nereden geldi?

6. Ankaradan geldi.

7. Ahmed'i nerede gördünüz?

8. Köpek nerede?

9. Köpeği bahçede gördüm.

10. Bir gün bir kedi bir köpek gördü. Köpek kediye gördü. Kedi köpeğe baktı, baktı. Birdenbire kedi bahçeden kaçtı. Çabuk kaçtı. Köpek bahçeden eve döndü.
11. Parayı kimden aldılar?
12. Parayı Mehmetten aldılar.
13. Kaç para aldılar?
14. Ahmet on beş lirayı kime verdi?
15. Parayı onlara verdi.
16. Sütü kim içti?
17. Neyi içtiniz?
18. Anne ve baba Ahmetten bahsettiler.
19. Çok geç geldiniz.
20. Evet, geç geldik.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. I also wanted that book.
2. Ahmet returned on Sunday.
3. Whom did they see in Izmir?
4. How many kilos of cheese did she want?
5. She wanted 250 grams of cheese.
6. This cheese is very good.
7. Where did they go yesterday?
8. Where did you come from this morning?
9. Who looked after the children?
10. Selma took care of them yesterday.
11. What did you see in the tree, Erdoğan?
12. I saw the cat in the tree, Father.
13. What did you find in the box, Ahmet?
14. I found ten liras in the box.
15. Who took the sugar out of the cup?

Lesson 9

Negative Verb. Interrogative Particle (m V⁴).

Negative Interrogative. Negative Expressions

1. Ahmet **Dün İstanbula gittiniz mi?**
Did you go to Istanbul yesterday?
Mehmet **Hayır, gitmedim. Fakat Erdoğan gitti.**
No, I didn't. But Erdoğan did.
A. **Niçin gitmediniz?**
Why didn't you go?
M. **İstemedim.**
I didn't want to.
2. Selma **Peynir satın almadınız mı?**
Didn't you buy (any) cheese?
Mihri **Almadım.**
No, I didn't.
S. **Hiç bir şey satın almadınız mı?**
Didn't you buy anything?
M. **Süt, kahve ve şeker satın aldım.**
I bought milk and coffee and sugar.
3. Ali **Ahmet parayı bulmadı mı?**
Didn't Ahmet find the money?
Sait **Bulmadı.**
No, he didn't.
A. **Onu siz buldunuz mu?**
Did you find it?
S. **Hayır, ben de bulmadım.**
No, I didn't find it either.

4. Anne **Köpeği gördün mü?**
Have you seen the dog?
- Kız **Hayır, köpeği görmedim. Sen de onu görmedin mi?**
No, I haven't seen the dog. Haven't you seen him either?
- A. **Ben de görmedim. Kediye nerede gördün?**
I haven't either. Where did you see the cat?
- K. **Kediye de görmedim. Onu sen de görmedin mi?**
I haven't seen the cat either. Haven't you seen her either?

I. Negative verb (-m V²)

The negative sign (or particle or syllable) is -m V². It is attached directly to the verb stem, and other suffixes are added to it.

COMMON INFINITIVE

POSITIVE		NEGATIVE	
gitmek	going, to go	gitmemek	not going, not to go
almak	taking, to take	almamak	
istemek	desiring, to want, to need	istememek	

NOTE: The syllable preceding the negative sign receives a distinct stress accent.

PAST DEFINITE NEGATIVE VERB FORMS

gitmedim	almadım	istemedim
gitmedin	almadın	istemedin
gitmedi	almadı	istemedi
gitmedik	almadık	istemedik
gitmediniz	almadınız	istemediniz
gitmediler	almadılar	istemediler

(For meanings, see the positive forms, Lesson 5, section 3.)

NEGATIVE IMPERATIVE FORMS

gitme	alma	isteme
gitmeyin	almayın	istemeyin
gitmesin	almasın	istemesin
gitmeyiniz	almayınız	istemeyiniz
gitmesinler	almasınlar	istemesinler

(For meanings, see the positive forms, Lesson 7, section 4.)

2. Interrogative particle (m V⁴)

Turkish possesses a spoken question mark, the interrogative particle *m* V⁴. Although it conforms in vowel harmony to the preceding word, this interrogative sign is not suffixed but is an independent word to which other suffixes may be added.

The syllable before the interrogative sign receives a distinct stress accent. There is no interrogative form of the infinitive.

PAST DEFINITE INTERROGATIVE VERB FORMS

buldum mu?	istedim mi?
buldun mu?	istedin mi?
buldu mu?	istedi mi?
bulduk mu?	istedik mi?
buldunuz mu?	istediniz mi?
buldular mı?	istediler mi?

The second person imperatives have no interrogative forms. Those for the third person imperatives are

Gelsin.	Let him come.	Gelsin mi?	Should he come?
	It would be a good idea if he were to come.		Wouldn't it be a good idea for him to come?

Gelsinler.	Gelsinler mi?
-------------------	----------------------

The interrogative sign may follow other words besides verb forms,

Geldi mi?	Did he come?
O mu geldi?	Was it <i>he</i> who came?
Dün geldi mi?	Did he come yesterday?
Dün mü geldi?	Did he come <i>yesterday</i> ?
Dün o mu geldi?	Was it <i>he</i> who came yesterday?

3. Negative interrogative verb

PAST DEFINITE, NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE VERB FORMS

bulmadım mı?	istememedim mi?
bulmadın mı?	istemedin mi?
bulmadı mı?	istemedi mi?
bulmadık mı?	istemedik mi?
bulmadınız mı?	istemediniz mi?
bulmadılar mı?	istemediler mi?

gelmesin mi?

gelmesinler mi?

4. Negative expressions

The word *ne*, in addition to being the interrogative 'what?' and an exclamatory word 'how very!' (*ne güzel!* 'how lovely!'; *ne büyük!* 'how large!'), also has a negative use: *ne . . . ne* 'neither . . . nor.' When *ne . . . ne* appears in a negative expression, the verb is positive.

ne sen ne ben

neither you nor I

Ne sen gittin, ne ben (gittim).

Neither you nor I went.

Ne Ahmedi ne Mehmedi gördüm.

I saw neither Ahmet nor Mehmet.

NOTE: *Ne* sometimes serves as an interrogative (*ne zaman?* 'what time?' 'when?'), but the usual interrogative is *hangi* 'which (one)?'

hangi gün?

which day? what day?

hangi kız?

which girl? what girl?

Hiç means 'none,' 'nothing.' *Hiç bir* means 'not a.' With these negative words, a negative verb is used.

Hiç bir şey istemedi.

He didn't want anything.

Hiç also means 'never.'

Kız hiç gülmedi.

The girl never laughed. The girl didn't laugh at all.

Hiç gitmedi mi?

Didn't he go at all? Did he never go? Didn't he ever go?

With a positive interrogative verb, *hiç* means 'ever.'

Hiç İstanbul'a gittiniz mi?

Have you ever been to Istanbul?

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Ahmet! Sen bugün mektebe gitmedin mi?
2. Hayır, baba. Bugün mektebe gitmedim.
3. Şehre gittin mi?
4. Hayır, baba. Bugün ne mektebe gittim ne de şehre.
5. O halde nereye gittin? Ne yaptın?
6. Bir bahçe gördüm. Bahçeye girdim.
7. Hangi bahçeye girdin?
8. Büyük bahçeye gitmedim. Küçük bahçeye girdim.

9. İzmir'e gittiniz mi? Orada ne kadar kaldınız?
Orada iki, iki buçuk ay kaldım.
10. Ahmet, iyi çocuk ol! Mektebe git! Her gün git! Çok çok çalış! Anladın mı?
Anlamadın mı?
Anladım, baba, anladım.
11. Hiç Ankaraya gittiniz mi?
Hayır, oraya hiç gitmedim. Çok gitmek istedim, fakat gitmedim.
Ben Bursaya bile hiç gitmedim. Yalnız bir şehir gördüm—İstanbul.
Siz Ankaraya gittiniz mi?
Evet, oraya çok gittim. İzmir'e gittim. Adanaya da gittim . . .
12. Adanaya kaç defa gittiniz?
Adanaya mı? Oraya beş altı defa gittim.
Demek siz çok seyahat ettiniz.
Evet, çok seyahat ettim.
13. Ankarayı nasıl buldunuz? Güzel mi?
Evet, Ankara güzel.
Ya İstanbul?
İstanbul mu? O da güzel, çok güzel.
14. Bugün nereden geldiniz?
Bugün Adanadan geldim.
Oraya hangi gün gittiniz?
Oraya Cumartesi günü gittim.
Adanayı nasıl buldunuz?
Çok büyük ve çok güzel. Fakat sıcak!
15. Onlar sizden para istediler mi, istemediler mi?
İstediler, iki yüz yetmiş beş lira istediler.
İki yüz yetmiş beş lirayı onlara verdiniz mi, vermediniz mi?
Vermemek istedim, fakat verdim. Dün Ahmet bana üç yüz lira verdi.
Bugün onlara iki yüz yetmiş beş lirayı verdim.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Has Ahmet gone?
2. Was it Ahmet who went?
3. Did they give you the book? No, they didn't.
4. Has Selma seen the two boys? Yes, she has.
5. Why didn't you give us the money? Didn't you want to?
6. I gave the money to Erdoğan yesterday. Haven't you seen him?
7. Should they come or not?
8. Why shouldn't Ahmet come?

9. She drank neither coffee nor tea.
10. Fahrünnisa drank nothing at all.
11. Did they ever go to Ankara?
12. Have you ever been to Ankara?
13. Did they come from Izmir?
14. No, they didn't come from there. They came from Adana.
15. Have you given Father the newspaper?
16. Yes, I have given it to him.
17. What did you find in the room?
18. I didn't find anything there.
19. Don't let him put either the cheese or the sugar into that box!
20. Should Ahmet read the newspaper or not?

Lesson 10

The Possessive Construction

-
- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. çocuğum | my child |
| 2. oğlun | your son |
| 3. oğlu | his son |
| 4. Ahmedin oğlu | Ahmet's son |
| 5. çocuklarımız | our children |
| 6. oğlunuz | your son |
| 7. oğullarınız | your sons |
| 8. Ahmedin oğulları | Ahmet's sons |
| 9. çocuğumun kitabı | my child's book |
| 10. Çocuğumun kitabını kim aldı? | Who took my son's book? |
| 11. oğlunun kitapları | your son's books |
| 12. Oğlunun kitaplarını hiç görmedik. | We have never seen your son's books. |
| 13. Ahmedin oğlunun kitapları nerede? | Where are Ahmet's boy's books? |
| 14. Ahmedin oğullarının büyük kitabını nereye koydular? | Where have they put the big book of Ahmet's sons? |
| 15. radyo sahibi | radio owner |
| 16. radyonun sahibi | owner of the radio |
| 17. O adam ev sahibi mi? | Is that man (a) house owner? |
| 18. Bu evin sahibi o adam mı? | Is the owner of this house that man? |
| 19. Ankara Bulvarı İstanbulda mı? | Is Ankara Boulevard in Istanbul? |
| 20. Ankaranın bulvarları ne güzel! | Ankara's main streets are certainly lovely! |
| 21. Ev sahibinizin radyosunu kimin otomobiline koydular? | Whose car did they put your landlord's radio into? |
-

1. The possessive construction

In possession, two elements are involved: A—the possessor; and B—what is possessed.

A	B	B	A
John's	book	the book of	John

In Turkish, the two substantives (A and B) are 'welded' into a grammatical relationship. They always stand in the order A—B. The first substantive A (the possessor) is here termed 'first member.' The second substantive B (the thing possessed) is termed the 'second member.'

The essential element which always joins the two members is a suffix added to the second member. This is here called the possessive suffix.

Still another suffix may be essential to the possessive construction. This suffix is added to the first member and is called the possessive definite suffix.

Hence the technical terms which the student should bear in mind in order to understand the possessive construction are:

1. first member	possessor (A), to this a suffix may be added
2. second member	thing possessed (B), to this a suffix must be added
3. possessive definite suffix	suffix which may be added to first member
4. possessive suffix	suffix which must be added to second member
5. possessive construction	possessor (A), thing possessed (B), and the suffixes as required by the situation.

Those possessive constructions whose first members bear the possessive definite suffix are here called Type I. Those possessive constructions whose first members bear no possessive definite suffix are called Type II. Ordinarily, no word may intervene between the first and second members of a Type II construction. Words may intervene between the members of a Type I construction.

2. Possessive definite suffix: -(n) V⁴ n

This suffix -(n) V⁴ n is added directly to the singular or plural. Its meaning is that of English 's attached to a definite substantive, but this suffix is not

the essential element in the Turkish expression of possession. Instead, it shows that the possessor is definite.

ev	(the) house	halı	(the) rug
evin	the house's	halının	the rug's
evlerin	the houses'	halıların	the rugs'
ayak	(the) foot	bu	this (substantive)
ayağın	the foot's	bunun	of this
ayakların	the feet's	bunların	of these

The pronoun forms are

benim (note the first person suffix) my	bizim (note the first person suffix) our
senin your	sizin your
onun his, her, its	onların their

The buffer consonant with *su* 'water' is *y* rather than *n*.

su	(the) water	sular	(the) water(s)
suyun	the water's	suların	the waters'

3. Possessive suffixes

There is a possessive suffix for each person, singular and plural. That of the third person singular is $-(s) V^4$; that of the third person plural is $-l V^2 r i/1$. These third person possessive suffixes translate (awkwardly) as 'of him,' 'of her,' 'of it,' 'of them.'

The possessive suffixes for all persons are

singular

1st person	$-(V^4) m$	of me
2nd person	$-(V^4) n$	of you
3rd person	$-(s) V^4$	of him, etc.

plural

1st person	$-(V^4) m V^4 z$	of us
2nd person	$-(V^4) n V^4 z$	of you
3rd person	$-l V^2 r i/1$	of them

NOTE: When an originally Arabic noun with a final 'ayn (see Lesson 6, section 5) receives a third singular possessive suffix, the result may be

<i>camii</i>	mosque of him
(or) <i>camisi</i>	mosque of him (This form is more in vogue.)

4. Types I and II possessive constructions

TYPE I

FIRST MEMBER	SECOND MEMBER
<i>çocuğun</i> of the child, the child's i.e., (the) garden of the child	<i>bahçesi</i> (the) garden of him
<i>çocuğun</i> of the child, the child's i.e., (the) gardens of the child	<i>bahçeleri</i> (the) gardens of him
<i>çocukların</i> of the children, the children's i.e., (the) garden(s) of the children	<i>bahçeleri</i> garden(s) of them

Note that this last example is ambiguous. The word *bahçeleri* may be the singular (*bahçe*) plus the third plural possessive suffix (-*leri*) required by the first member (*çocukların*), i.e., *bahçe-leri*. If so, the words *çocukların bahçeleri* mean '(the) garden of the children.' But the word *bahçeleri* may also be the plural (*bahçeler*) plus the third plural possessive suffix (-*leri*) required by the first member (*çocukların*). Two plural suffixes never come on the same noun: hence the logically expectable *bahçe-ler-leri* does not occur. Thus *çocukların bahçeleri* may mean both

(the) garden of the children
(the) gardens of the children

The ambiguity may be resolved in one of two ways: the context is left to show whether one or more gardens is intended; a singular possessive suffix is given the second member, even though the first member is plural: *çocukların bahçesi*, '(the) garden of the children,' in which 'garden' is indubitably singular.

TYPE II

FIRST MEMBER	SECOND MEMBER
<i>çocuk</i> child (or) children i.e., (the) child-garden, children-garden, kindergarten, children's park, playground	<i>bahçesi</i> (the) garden of him, (the) garden of them
<i>çocuk</i> child (or) children i.e., (the) child-gardens, children-gardens, kindergartens, playgrounds	<i>bahçeleri</i> (the) gardens of him, (the) gardens of them

A comparison of the two types of possessive construction

- | | |
|---------------------------|---------------------------|
| I. <i>çocuğun bahçesi</i> | (the) garden of the child |
| II. <i>çocuk bahçesi</i> | (the) child-garden |

demonstrates the essential difference in meaning between the two types. That difference turns on the definiteness or indefiniteness of the first member.

In Type I the first member is always definite. Thus the possessive definite suffix, like the objective definite suffix (see Lesson 6, section 2), may be called a sort of definite article in a specialized use. The student should note, however, that by express stipulation the first member of a Type I possessive construction may become indefinite.

	<i>iyi bir çocuğun büyük bir bahçesi</i>	a large garden of a (or one) good child
Compare	<i>iyi çocuğun büyük bir bahçesi</i>	a large garden of the good child
and	<i>iyi çocuğun büyük bahçesi</i>	(the) large garden of the good child

In a Type II possessive construction the first member is not definite. Instead, as in the possessive construction *çocuk bahçesi*, a singular first member frequently is used collectively or generically—here in the sense of any and all children. This phenomenon, the fact that a singular may have a generic or collective (plural) meaning, is very frequent in Turkish.

Type II serves where English would use an adjective of nationality.

<i>Türk lisanı</i>	(the) Turkish language
<i>Türk alfabesi</i>	(the) Turkish alphabet

5. Personal pronouns as members of possessive constructions

A possessive construction whose first member is a personal pronoun is Type I because personal pronouns are definite. The personal pronoun (the first member) need not be expressed unless it is desired to emphasize the possessor's identity.

<i>bahçem</i>	my garden	<i>benim bahçem</i>	my garden
---------------	-----------	---------------------	-----------

In informal speech incomplete possessive constructions of the first and second person (possessive suffix omitted) are not infrequent.

<i>bizim bahçe</i>	our garden (for <i>bahçemiz</i>)
<i>sizin bahçe</i>	your garden (for <i>bahçeniz</i>)

6. Possessive complexes

A possessive construction (i.e., the complete construction with all its suffixes) may itself serve as first or second member of another possessive construction. Such a possessive relationship—one or both of whose members may themselves consist of one (or more) possessive constructions—is called a possessive complex.

TYPE I

FIRST MEMBER	SECOND MEMBER
(<i>benim</i>) <i>çocuğumun</i>	<i>bahçesi</i>
(of me) of the child of me	(the) garden of him
i.e., (the) garden of the child of me, (the) garden of my child, my child's garden	

The Type I unit (*benim çocuğum*) becomes the first member of the Type I complex. The first member (*çocuğum*) must have a possessive definite suffix: *çocuğumun*.

TYPE II

FIRST MEMBER	SECOND MEMBER
<i>Ankara</i>	<i>çocuk bahçesi</i>
of Ankara	(the) kindergarten (of it)
i.e., (the) Ankara Kindergarten or Nursery School (name of an institution)	

The Type II unit (*çocuk bahçesi*) becomes the second member of the possessive complex (*Ankara çocuk bahçesi*). The second member of the Type II complex (the unit *çocuk bahçesi*) already has a possessive suffix (*bahçe-si*). No word may bear more than one possessive suffix. Hence the *-si* of *bahçesi* does double duty, serving (a) as possessive suffix for the Type II possessive construction *çocuk bahçesi*, and (b) as possessive suffix for the possessive complex, *Ankara çocuk bahçesi*, '(the) Ankara Kindergarten.'

Compare

<i>Ankaranın</i>	<i>çocuk bahçesi</i>
of Ankara	(the) kindergarten of it
i.e., Ankara's kindergarten	
<i>Ankaranın</i>	<i>çocuk bahçeleri</i>
of Ankara	(the) kindergartens of it
i.e., Ankara's kindergartens	
İstanbul Caddesi	Istanbul Avenue
Ankara Bulvarı	Ankara Boulevard
İstanbulun güzel caddeleri	Istanbul's lovely avenues
Ankaranın büyük bulvarları	Ankara's great boulevards

Some expressions (mostly place-names) which were originally Type II possessive constructions tend to lose the possessive suffix.

Arnavutköy Albanian Village (name of a part of Istanbul); older form, *Arnavutköyü*

Other place-names always retain the possessive suffix

Beyoğlu Bey's-son (name of the downtown section of Istanbul)

In the case of a noun whose absolute form ends in a vowel, note the 'disappearance' of the third person possessive suffix when its possessive form becomes a member of a possessive complex.

yatak odası	bedroom
(benim) yatak odam	my bedroom
(senin) yatak odan	your bedroom
onun yatak odası	his bedroom
(bizim) yatak odamız	our bedroom
(sizin) yatak odanız	your bedroom
onların yatak odası	their bedroom
(benim) yatak odalarım	my bedrooms
(senin) yatak odaların	your bedrooms
onun yatak odaları	his bedrooms
(bizim) yatak odalarımız	our bedrooms
(sizin) yatak odalarınız	your bedrooms
onların yatak odaları	their bedrooms

7. The word *sahip* in possessive constructions

The student should avoid the logical pitfall involved when the word *sahip* (*sahibi* 'owner,' 'possessor,' 'master') is used in possessive constructions. Despite its meaning, this word is not the first member (possessor), but the second member (thing possessed).

A	B	B	A
John's	book	the book	of John
the rug's	owner	the owner	of the rug

Study these examples

- | | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1. halının sahibi | (the) owner of the rug |
| 2. halının bir sahibi | one (an) owner of the rug |
| 3. bir halının bir sahibi | an (one) owner of a (one) rug |
| 4. halıların sahibi | (the) owner of the rugs |
| 5. halıların bir sahibi | an (one) owner of the rugs |

6. halı sahibi	(the) rug owner
7. bir halı sahibi	a (one) rug owner
8. halı sahipleri	(the) rug owners
9. halının iki sahibi	(the) two owners of the rug
10. iki halı sahibi	(the) two rug owners

8. Suffixes added to a possessive suffix

When other suffixes are added to the possessive suffixes, no phonetic buffer is needed after the possessive suffixes of the first and second persons.

Bahçemi gördüler.	They saw my garden.
Otomobillerimi istediler.	They wanted my cars.
(senin) Kitabımı aldılar.	They took your book.
(senin) Kitaplarını okudular.	They read your books.
Paramızı buldular.	They found our money.
Evlerimizi gördüler.	They have seen our houses.
(sizin) Çocuğunuzu gördük.	We saw your child.
(sizin) Çocuklarınızı gördü.	He saw your children.

When other suffixes are added to a third person possessive suffix, singular or plural, a buffer consonant is needed. This buffer—*n*—is inserted not only when required by an immediately suffixed vowel, but also before a following locative or ablative suffix.

Bahçesini gördüler.	They have seen his garden.
(onun) Bahçelerini gördüler.	They saw his gardens.
Onların bahçesini gördük.	We have seen their garden.
Onların bahçelerini gördük.	We have seen their gardens.

Study the following examples.

1. Babasının evi İstanbulda.	His father's home is in Istanbul.
2. Kız annesine güldü.	The girl laughed at her mother.
3. Senin kitabımı bulmadı.	He didn't find your book.
4. Kitabımı buldu.	He found his book.
5. Evinde iki çocuk buldular.	They found two children in his house.
6. İki çocuğu senin evinde buldum.	I found the two children in your house.
7. İstanbul şehrinden Ankara şehrine geldi.	He had come from Istanbul (city) to Ankara (city).
8. Onun kız kardeşlerinin evi büyük.	His sisters' house is large.

9. Senin kız kardeşlerinin evi büyük.
10. Onların kız kardeşlerinin evi büyük.
11. Onların babasının evi büyük.
12. Çocuklar annelerine baktılar.
13. Kitaplarını bulmadılar.
14. Senin kitaplarını bulmadılar.
15. Parayı evlerinde buldu.
16. Parayı onların evinde buldu.
17. Parayı Ahmedin ceplerinde buldu.
18. Parayı senin ceplerinde buldu.
19. Çocuklarınız dün sabah Ahmedin annesinin evinde iki saat kaldılar.
20. Küçük oğlunuzun ceplerinde Ahmedin babasının beş lirasını buldum.

Your sisters' house is large.
 Their sisters' house is large.
 Their father's house is large.
 The children looked at their mothers.
 They didn't find their books.
 They didn't find your books.
 He found the money in their houses (or house).
 He found the money in their house.
 He found the money in Ahmet's pockets.
 He found the money in your (one person's) pockets.
 Yesterday morning your children stayed two hours at Ahmet's mother's house.
 I found Ahmed's father's five liras in your little son's pockets.

9. Kendi

The word *kendi* 'self' is much used with possessive constructions.

1. to mean 'own' (modifies second member)

kendi kitabım	my own book
kendi kitabın	your own book
kendi kitabı	his (her or its) own book
kendi kitabımız	our own book
kendi kitabınız	your own book
kendi kitapları	their own book or books
kendi kitaplarım	my own books
kendi kitapların	your own books
(onun) kendi kitapları	his own books
kendi kitaplarımız	our own books
kendi kitaplarınız	your own books
onların kendi kitapları	their own books

2. to form the emphatic personal pronoun

(ben) kendim	I myself	(biz) kendimiz
(sen) kendin		(siz) kendiniz
(o) kendisi		(onlar) kendileri

NOTE: *Kendi kendine geldi.*
Kendine geldi.

He came of his own accord.
He came to (regained consciousness).

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

SIMPLE POSSESSIVE CONSTRUCTIONS

1. Ahmedin annesi çok genç.
2. Eviniz nerede?
3. Çocuğun babası geldi.
4. Baban kim?
5. Şehrin suyu çok iyi.
6. Onların babası buraya gelsin!
7. Babaları oraya gitmesinler!
8. Kitabınız bu mu?
9. Halı sahibi parayı aldı.
10. Kimin elması bu?
11. Türk alfabesi kolay.
12. Türk lisanı güç mü?
13. Bahçeniz çok büyük mü?
14. Ankara Bulvarı güzel.
15. Ankaranın bulvarları ne güzel!
16. Yatak odanız küçük mü?
17. Ders odamız sıcak.
18. O kadın otomobil sahibi mi?
19. Ev sahibi nerede?
20. Bu evin sahibi kim?
21. Kendi kitabım evde.
22. Parayı ev sahibi istemedi.
23. Salı günü geldiler.
24. Çay fincanları nerede?
25. Bu ders kitabı çok büyük.

POSSESSIVE COMPLEXES, ETC.

1. Babanızın gözleri güzel.
2. Şehrimizin ağaçları çok büyük.

3. Ahmedin iki oğlu geldiler.
4. Küçük çocuğun annesi çabuk gelsin!
5. Ev sahibinin radyosu çok güzel.
6. Ev sahibiniz nerede?
7. Arkadaşınızın annesinin evi büyük.
8. Kızımın arkadaşları bugün buraya gelmesinler!
9. Kimin babasının evi bu?
10. Oğlunuzun ismi ne?
11. Ev sahiplerinin ismini bilmediler mi?
12. Ahmedin çocuklarına kim baksın?
13. Beyoğlunun caddelerinden geçtim.
14. Kızkardeşimin yatak odasına ne onun kitaplarını koydum ne kendi kitaplarımı.
15. Kitaplarımı almadılar mı?
16. Babanızın parasını o çocukların annesine vermeyiniz!
17. Ankara çocuk bahçesinde kimi gördünüz?
18. Oğlumu ve Ahmedin iki kızını görmediniz mi?
19. Benim çocuğumdan bir kitap aldılar.
20. Çanakkaleden Boğaziçine gitti.
21. Beyoğluna ne zaman gittiler?
22. Hiç Toros dağlarını gördünüz mü?
23. Arkadaşının kitabını istemedi.
24. Kendi kitabını istedi.
25. Evime gelme! Arkadaşının evine git!

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Whom did you find in our classroom?
2. Ahmet's mother went into the boys' bedroom.
3. My brother's landlord put his car into my father's garage.
4. The automobile went from Beyoğlu to Istanbul University.
5. The steamer passed through the Dardanelles.
6. Your little sister's teacups are pretty.
7. My landlord's own house is on Istanbul Street.
8. Your son's feet are large.
9. What is your little brother's name?
10. Why didn't Ahmet's sister go to your sisters' house last night?
11. Have you ever been to Beyoğlu?
12. Ahmet had never seen the Black Sea, but he had seen the Sea of Marmara.
13. They gave my mother's money to the sisters of Mehmet and Erdoğan.

14. He left the small classroom and went into the big one.
15. Istanbul city is very old. Ankara city is new.
16. The new Turkish alphabet is easy.
17. Don't ever go there.
18. The Bosphorus is very beautiful. The Dardanelles are beautiful, too.
19. Have you ever seen the Dardanelles?
20. Didn't you go to the Dardanelles yesterday?
21. The car passed through the streets of Beyoğlu. It did not go through Karaköy.
22. Her father's house is in Afyonkarahisar.
23. Is this man a car owner?
24. The owner of the large automobile gave ten liras to the brother of the man who owns that house.
25. Whose books did you take from my friend's father's car?

Lesson 11

Infinitives. General Verbs

-
- | | |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| 1. eve girmek | to enter the house, action of entering the house |
| 2. Ahmedin eve girmesi | Ahmet's entering the house, the fact that Ahmet did (has, does, or will) enter the house |
| 3. kızkardeşinizin evimize gelmemesi | the fact that your sister did (has, does, or will) not come to our house |
| 4. Okumayı çok sever. | He greatly likes reading. |
| 5. O kitabı okumadan size verdim. | I gave you that book without having read it. |
| 6. Oraya gitmek çok güç. | Going there is very difficult. It's very difficult to go there. |
| 7. Oraya gitmemiz güç. | It's hard for us to go there. |
| 8. İngilizcede bu söz ne demek? | What does this word mean in English? |
| 9. Onu görmeye geldiler. | They came in order to see him. |
| 10. Gitmek istemedi. | He didn't want to go. |
| 11. Gitmemek istedi. | He wanted not to go. |
| 12. Yüzmek istedi. | He wanted to swim. |
| 13. Yüzmek bilmez. | He doesn't know how to swim. |
| 14. Türkçe bilir misiniz? | Do you know Turkish? |
| 15. İngilizce bilmezler mi? | Don't they know English? |
| 16. Çocuklar şeker severler. | Children like candy. |
| 17. Kedi köpekten korkar. | Cats are afraid of dogs. |
| 18. Postacı günde iki defa gelir. | The mailman comes twice a day. |

19. Çay sever misiniz?

Do you like tea?

20. Ben eve gelir gelmez size telefon ettim.

As soon as I got home I phoned you.

1. Infinitives

The common infinitive (see Lesson 5, section 1) seldom has suffixes added to it. The light infinitive—the common infinitive minus its final *k*—frequently receives suffixes.

LIGHT INFINITIVE

POSITIVE

gelme coming
gitme going

NEGATIVE

gelmeme not coming
gitmeme not going

(*onun*) *gitmesi*

his (her, its) going; the fact that he did, has (gone), does, or will go

(*onun*) *gitmemesi*

his (her, its) not going; the fact that he did, has (gone), does, or will not go

babanızın Ankaraya gitmesi

your father's going to Ankara; the fact that your father did go, has gone, does go, or will go to Ankara

annenizin evimize gelmemesi

your mother's not coming to our house (to us); the fact that your mother didn't, hasn't, doesn't, or won't come to our house

The light infinitive may be used as a modifier.

dolma kalem

fountain pen (*dolmak* 'to fill')

With the ablative suffix, the light infinitive means 'without (doing so and so),' 'without (having done so and so).'

Kitabı dün aldı. Bu sabah onu okumadan bana verdi.

He took the book yesterday. This morning, without having read it, he gave (it) to me.

NOTE: Some grammarians discuss this under the heading of a separate suffix, *-madan/-meden*.

The light infinitive is usually used when an infinitive is the object of another verb form.

O okumayı çok sever.

He greatly likes reading (really loves to read).

NOTE: The verbs *istemek* 'wish,' 'want,' 'need' and *bilmek* 'know' frequently take a common infinitive as object.

Gitmek istedi.

He wanted to go.

Gelmek bilmedi.

He never arrived.

The common infinitive, without suffixes, may be the subject of the verb 'to be,' or the subject of a predicate adjective when 'be' is not expressed.

Oraya gitmek güç(tür).

To go there (is) difficult.

compare *Oraya gitmemiz güç(tür).*

Our going there (is) difficult.

For the syllable in parenthesis (*tür*) see the forms of the verb 'to be,' Lesson 14, section 1.

The English 'to mean' is expressed by the common infinitive *demek* plus the (usually unexpressed present tense of the) verb 'to be.'

Bu ne demek(tir)?

What does this mean? (This [is] to say what?)

İngilizcede girl 'kız' demek(tir). In English 'girl' means *kız*.

The English 'that is to say' is also expressed by *demek*.

Demek, bunu bilmediler.

That is to say, they didn't know this.

The infinitives—common or light—may govern the objective definite suffix, or other appropriate suffixes, on preceding substantives, just as do finite verb forms.

Ankaraya gitmemeniz iyi oldu.

The fact that you didn't go to Ankara turned out to be a good thing.

The common infinitive with the suffix -s i/1 z i/1 n means 'without (doing so and so),' 'without having (done so and so).'

*Ahmet, kitabımı okumaksızın
Ankaraya gitti.*

Ahmet went to Ankara without reading
(without having read) my book.

The common infinitive with the following combination of two suffixes—(1) the ablative suffix and (2) the conditional suffix (see Lesson 20, section 4)—means 'rather than (doing so and so).'

*Sinemaya gitmektense okumayı
tercih ettim.*

Rather than go to the movies, I preferred to read.

2. General verbs

The general verb forms express what is always true and hence timeless (aorist). This is the time value of these English verbs.

Mice like cheese.
Children will fight.
The postman comes each day.

POSITIVE

The positive general verb forms are made by adding these suffixes to the verb stem.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st	-(GV) r V ⁴ m	-(GV) r V ⁴ z
2nd	-(GV) r s V ⁴ n	-(GV) r s V ⁴ n V ⁴ z
3rd	-(GV) r	-(GV) r l V ² r

The symbol GV represents the 'general verb form vowel' (general vowel).

- A verb whose stem ends in a vowel takes no general vowel.
- A monosyllabic verb stem ending in a consonant takes V² as the general vowel. This 'rule,' however, has many exceptions. General vowels are sometimes shown in dictionaries thus:

<i>almak (alır)</i>	to take
<i>bulmak (bulur)</i>	to find
<i>görmek (görür)</i>	to see
<i>gelmek (gelir)</i>	to come

- A polysyllabic verb stem ending in a consonant takes V⁴ as the general vowel.

The general verb forms express general validity, and habitual or customary action. Since what is always true will also be true in the future, the general also may be used as a future tense. It may also be used to express an intention on the speaker's part, a promise of sorts.

The positive general forms are

	SINGULAR		PLURAL
1st	giderim	I go, always go, will go	gideriz
2nd	gidersin		gidersiniz
3rd	gider		giderler

The positive interrogative forms are

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st	gider miyim?	gider miyiz?
2nd	gider misin?	gider misiniz?
3rd	gider mi?	giderler mi?

In the second person plural, these forms are the most polite of all ways to express a command in Turkish.

Lûtfen, kitabınızı bana verir misiniz?

Will you please give me your book? (or)
Please give me your book.

NEGATIVE

The negative general verb forms are made by suffixing to the (positive) verb stem these suffixes

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st	-m V ² m	-m V ² y i/ı z
2nd	-m V ² z s i/ı n	-m V ² z s i/ı n i/ı z
3rd	-m V ² z	-m V ² z l V ² r
1st	gitmem	gitmeyiz
2nd	gitmezsin	gitmezsiniz
3rd	gitmez	gitmezler

The negative interrogative general verb forms are

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st	gölmez miyim?	gölmez miyiz?
2nd	gölmez misin?	gölmez misiniz?
3rd	gölmez mi?	gölmezler mi?

The third singular positive and negative general verb forms (the general participles, see Lesson 16, section 2) are used, the one immediately following the other, to express the idea of 'as soon as.'

Buraya gelir gelmez parayı alınız.

As soon as you come (get) here,
take the money.

Ahmet buraya gelir gelmez parayı alsın.

Let Ahmet take the money as soon
as he gets here.

Buraya gelir gelmez parayı aldım.

As soon as I got here, I took the
money.

*Ahmet buraya gelir gelmez
Mehmet parayı aldı.*

As soon as Ahmet got here,
Mehmet took the money.

NOTE:

ister istemez

want to or not, willy-nilly

İster istemez, gitsin.

Let him go, whether he wants to or not.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Evimize gelmenizi çok isteriz, efendim. Sizi bekleriz, efendim, bekleriz.
2. New York'a gitmek çok para ister.

3. Selmanın Fahrünnisanın bütün kahve fincanlarını kırması ne fena(dır)!
4. Baba, ben sinemaya giderim.
Ahmet, ders kitabını okudun mu? Dersin hazır mı?
Okudum, baba, okudum. İki defa okudum.
Ne dersin Selma, çocuk bu akşam sinemaya gitsin mi, gitmesin mi?
Gitsin, Mehmet, gitsin. Neden gitmesin?
Pekiyi, gitsin. Şimdi git, Ahmet. Amma geç kalma!
Teşekkür ederim, baba. Sana da teşekkür ederim, anne. Geç kalmam.
5. Bu ne demek, Ahmet? Türkçe dersinde yalnız altı numara aldın. Ne oldu?
Çalışmadın mı? Çok çok çalış. Zaten, hayatta daima çalışmak lâzım(dır).
Anladın mı, anlamadın mı? Anladım, baba. Çalışırım. Çok çalışırım.
6. Bir çay içer misiniz, beyefendi?
Hayır, teşekkür ederim. Ben hiç çay içmem.
O halde bir kahve olmaz mı, efendim?
Teşekkür ederim, hanımefendi. Lütfen, bir kahve verir misiniz?
7. Ahmet Bey, çay içmektense kahve içmeyi tercih etti.
8. Ahmet ders kitabının bir kelimesini anlamaksızın okudu.
9. Yolunuz açık olsun, Ahmet Bey!
10. Mehmet her sabah evimize gelir. Ağabeyisi Erdoğan da gelsin!
11. Otobüslerde paralarımızı biletçilere veririz, biletlerimizi onların ellerinden alırız.
12. Ahmet Bey her sabah kahvaltı yapar, gazeteyi okur ve bürosuna gider.
13. Selma Hanım her sabah kahvaltı yapar, eve bakar ve çarşıya gider.
14. Ahmet Bey öğle yemeğini bir lokantada yer.
15. Çay içer misiniz?
16. Hayır efendim, hiç çay içmem.
17. Selim Bey Fransızca iyi bilir. İstanbul Üniversitesinde üç buçuk sene Fransızca okudu.
18. Ahmet geldi mi, gelmedi mi?
19. Henüz gelmedi. Fakat gelir, efendim, gelir.
20. Bu tren istasyondan saat sekizde kalkar.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Will Selma drink a glass of milk?
2. Thank you, madam. Selma never drinks milk. Would you please give her a glass of water?
3. Rather than drinking milk, Selma prefers to drink water.
4. Yesterday morning in the Covered Bazaar Ahmet Bey saw two lovely rugs.

5. He wanted to buy them both.
6. The rug owner asked 2,000 liras for the small one and 5,000 liras for the large.
7. Ahmet Bey said, 'That is very high. I will give 4,500 liras for the two.'
8. Without waiting a single moment, the man said, 'No. I want 7,000 liras for the two of them.'
9. As a result, Ahmet Bey left the Covered Bazaar without having bought the rugs.
10. As soon as he returned home, his wife said, 'Well, did you buy (a) rug?'
11. 'No, I didn't buy (one). The rug man wanted 7,000 liras for two nice rugs. I left the bazaar without buying the rugs,' he said.
12. 'Too bad,' said his wife.
13. 'A pity,' said Ahmet Bey, 'but he wanted 7,000 liras. I found that very expensive.'
14. His wife said, 'But I wanted a new rug!'
15. 'Yes, dear,' Ahmet Bey said. 'I'll try to find a nice rug.'

Lesson 12

Past General Verbs. Future Verbs. Adverbs.

Comparison. Emphatics. The Suffix -ç/c V²

1. 1953 senesinde Ahmet Bey Ankaraya haftada iki defa gider miydi?
2. 1954 senesinde de oraya haftada iki defa gitmez miydi?
3. O yazarın kitaplarını çok severdim.
4. Kızımız çok iyi dans eder.
5. Oğlum benden uzun(dur).
6. Selma kızkardeşinden (daha) güzel(dir).
7. En küçüğü, yani en az büyüğü istediler.
8. Yavaş yavaş öğreneceksiniz.
9. Saçları bir gecede bembeyaz oldu.
10. Ya siz—siz de gitmiyecek misiniz?
11. Bence, Ahmet Bey yarın gelmiyecek. Öbür gün gelecek.
12. Çocuğun kaç sene okudu?
13. Aman! Senelerce, kardeşim, senelerce!

In 1953 did Ahmet Bey ordinarily go to Ankara twice a week?

Didn't he also regularly go there twice weekly in 1954?

I used to be very fond of that writer's books.

Our daughter dances very well.

My son is taller than I am.

Selma is prettier than her sister.

They wanted the very smallest one, i.e., the least large one.

Step by step, you'll learn.

Her hair turned snow white over night.

And you, aren't you going to go, either?

It's my opinion that Ahmet Bey won't come tomorrow. He'll come the day after tomorrow.

How long did your child study?

My goodness! Years and years, my friend, years and years!

14. Ne dersiniz, beyefendi,
çocuklar geç kalacaklar mı,
kalmıyacaklar mı?
15. Her halde geç kalacaklar.
Zaten onlar daima geç
kalırlar.

What's your opinion, sir; will the
youngsters be late or not?

They will probably be late. For
that matter, they are always late.

1. Past general verbs

There is a past general verb meaning 'used to (do so and so).' It is formed by adding to the third singular positive general form, the suffixes of the past forms of the verb 'to be' (see Lesson 14, section 1), as follows (the vowel in this suffix is V⁴).

	POSITIVE		NEGATIVE
singular			
1st	giderdim	I used to go	gitmezdim I used not to go
2nd	giderdin		gitmezdin
3rd	giderdi		gitmezdi
plural			
1st	giderdik		gitmezdik
2nd	giderdiniz		gitmezdiniz
3rd	giderlerdi		gitmezlerdi
	POSITIVE INTERROGATIVE		NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE
singular			
1st	gider miydim?	Did I used to go?	gitmez miydim? Didn't I used to go?
2nd	gider miydin?		gitmez miydin?
3rd	gider miydi?		gitmez miydi?
plural			
1st	gider miydik?		gitmez miydik?
2nd	gider miydiniz?		gitmez miydiniz?
3rd	giderler miydi?		gitmezler miydi?

2. Future verbs

The future verb forms express a definite intention which the speaker holds as of the time he speaks. As a promise it is more forceful than the general tense.

The suffixes of the positive future verb forms are

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st	-(y) V ² c V ² ğ i/1 m	-(y) V ² c V ² ğ i/1 z
2nd	-(y) V ² c V ² k s i/1 n	-(y) V ² c V ² k s i/1 n i/1 z
3rd	-(y) V ² c V ² k (t i/1 r)	-(y) V ² c V ² k l V ² r (d i/1 r)

When the syllable -t/d i/1 r (see Lesson 14, section 1) is added to the third person singular or plural, the force of the assertion is somewhat strengthened.

Verb stems which end in *e* or *a* change the final *e* to *i* and the final *a* to *ı* before the immediately following (buffer) *y* of the future suffixes.

	SINGULAR		PLURAL
1st	gideceğim	I shall go. I am going to go.	gideceğiz
2nd	gideceksin		gideceksiniz
3rd	gidecek(tir)		gidecekler(dir)
1st	bulacağım	I shall find (it).	bulacağız
2nd	bulacaksın		bulacaksınız
3rd	bulacak(tır)		bulacaklar(dır)
1st	anlıyacağım	I shall understand (it).	anlıyacağız
2nd	anlıyacaksın		anlıyacaksınız
3rd	anlıyacak(tır)		anlıyacaklar(dır)

Note that before the immediately following (buffer) *y* of the future suffixes, a final vowel V² becomes the variable vowel *i/ı*.

The future interrogative forms are

	SINGULAR		PLURAL
1st	gidecek miyim?	Shall I go? Am I going to go?	gidecek miyiz?
2nd	gidecek misin?		gidecek misiniz?
3rd	gidecek mi(dir)?		gidecekler mi(dir)?
1st	bulacak mıyım?	Shall I find (it)?	bulacak mıyız?
2nd	bulacak mısın?		bulacak mısınız?
3rd	bulacak mıdır)?		bulacaklar mıdır)?
1st	anlıyacak mıyım?	Shall I understand (it)?	anlıyacak mıyız?
2nd	anlıyacak mısın?		anlıyacak mısınız?
3rd	anlıyacak mıdır)?		anlıyacaklar mıdır)?

The future negative forms are

SINGULAR			PLURAL
1st	gitmiyeceğim	I shall not go. I am not going to go.	gitmiyeceğiz
2nd	gitmiyeceksin		gitmiyeceksiniz
3rd	gitmiyecek(tir)		gitmiyecekler(dır)
1st	bulmiyacağım	I shall not find (it).	bulmiyacağız
2nd	bulmiyacaksın		bulmiyacaksınız
3rd	bulmiyacak(tır)		bulmiyacaklar(dır)
1st	anlamıyacağım	I shall not understand (it).	anlamıyacağız
2nd	anlamıyacaksın		anlamıyacaksınız
3rd	anlamıyacak(tır)		anlamıyacaklar(dır)

The future negative interrogative verb forms are

SINGULAR			PLURAL
1st	gitmiyecek miyim?	Am I not going to go?	gitmiyecek miyiz?
2nd	gitmiyecek misin?		gitmiyecek misiniz?
3rd	gitmiyecek mi(dir)?		gitmiyecekler mi(dir)?
1st	bulmiyacak mıyım?	Am I not going to find (it)?	bulmiyacak mıyız?
2nd	bulmiyacak mısın?		bulmiyacak mısınız?
3rd	bulmiyacak mı(dır)?		bulmiyacaklar mı(dır)?
1st	anlamıyacak mıyım?	Am I not going to understand (it)?	anlamıyacak mıyız?
2nd	anlamıyacak mısın?		anlamıyacak mısınız?
3rd	anlamıyacak mı(dır)?		anlamıyacaklar mı(dır)?

3. Adverbs

The same word may serve as adjective and adverb.

<i>iyi bir kız</i>	a good girl
<i>iyi anlamak</i>	to understand well

4. Comparison

The simple expression of comparison requires only the ablative suffix.

<i>benden büyük</i>	bigger than I
<i>sizden iyi</i>	better than you
<i>ondan az</i>	less than that

The fuller expression of comparison adds the adverbs *daha* 'more' or *az* 'less.' The superlative uses the adverbs *en* 'most' or *en az* 'least.'

<i>benden daha büyük</i>	bigger than I
<i>sizden daha iyi</i>	better than you
<i>en büyük</i>	the biggest
<i>en az</i>	the least
<i>sizden az çalışkan</i>	less industrious than you
<i>en az çalışkan</i>	the least industrious

5. Emphatics

Many adjectives have special emphatic forms. Such forms are shown in dictionaries as separate words.

ADJECTIVE		EMPHATIC FORM	
beyaz	white	bembeyaz	white as can be, as snow
açık	open	apaçık	wide open
uzun	long	upuzun	extremely long
çıplak	naked	çırçıplak	stark naked
siyah	black	simsiyah	jet black

Apart from these emphatics, the ordinary means for securing emphasis is simply to say a word twice.

<i>yavaş</i>	slowly
<i>yavaş yavaş</i>	very slowly
<i>Güldü güldü.</i>	He laughed and laughed.

6. The suffix -ç/c V²

Among the uses of this suffix are

- a. to mean 'as for.'

<i>bence</i>	as for me, as I see it
<i>fikrimce</i>	as for my idea, in my view, etc.

- b. to mean 'ish' (frequently pejorative), '-ly.'

<i>çocukça</i>	like a child, childishly, kiddish, kiddishly
<i>aptalca</i>	stupidly
<i>türkçe</i>	in the Turkish way, i.e., the Turkish language (and so with all languages, <i>Arapça, Fransızca, Rusça, İngilizce</i> , etc.)

NOTE: *bu* 'this' forms *bunca* 'thus,' 'in this way,' 'this much.'

- c. *yüzlerce* hundreds and hundreds, hundred after hundred
yıllarca years and years, year after year

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Evim evinizden daha büyük(tür).
2. Saidin Amerikadan gelmesi iyi mi olacak?
Sait henüz Amerikadan gelmedi. O Haziran ayında gelecektir.
3. O yıl, ayda bir Ankaraya giderdik.
4. Tuzu bana verir misiniz, lütfen?
5. Ne dersiniz, efendim; oraya gidecek miyiz, gitmiyecek miyiz?
6. Size geldiler mi?
Evet efendim, iki defa geldiler.
İki defa mı? O halde, bize de gelecekler.
Her halde gelecekler.
7. Ahmet Beylere gitmediniz mi?
Gitmedim. Zaten, ben oraya hiç gitmem.
8. Gazeteyi açar açmaz bunu gördüm.
9. İki çocuk koşmaya başladılar.
10. Kızın saçları simsiyah.
11. Çok kitap okumak iyi.
12. Küçük kızın okuması iyi.
13. Bu yazıları kim yazdı?
Ben yazdım.
Çocuğum, böyle yazma! Daha iyi yazmak lâzım!
14. En güzel elmalar kimin (elmaları)?
15. Bunlar sizin mi?
16. Babam saat 7:00de kalkar, kahvaltı yapar, gazeteyi okur, saat 8:30da otomobile biner, bürosuna gider.
17. Okumak istemez mi?
Hiç istemez.
18. Siz bugün gitmiyecek misiniz?
19. Hayır, fakat yarın gideceğim.
20. Bunları kime vereceksiniz?
21. Ahmet, parayı bana vermeden İtalyaya gitmiyecek.
22. Fikrinizce, Ahmet paramı alır mı?
23. Ahmet annenizin evine yarın gitsin mi, gitmesin mi?
24. Dün gelmediler fakat yarın gelecekler.
25. Parayı bize verecek misiniz, vermiyecek misiniz?

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Why aren't you going to go to Beyoğlu?

2. From whom did Selma's father buy his car?
3. In which garage will he put it?
4. Which movie are they going to go to?
5. Mehmet never goes to the movies.
6. We used to go to the movies twice a week.
7. As I see it, your son's not having read this book is (a) bad (thing).
8. They searched for days and days but they did not find the dog.
9. For whom did you wait?
10. I shall expect you at my house tomorrow.
11. As soon as I got to Ankara, I phoned Mehmet Bey.
12. He will not go to Ankara without (first) giving you the books.
13. My dog is bigger than Selma's dog.
14. His dog is completely white but my dog is jet black.
15. Go slow!
16. I didn't entirely understand.
17. The smallest girl ate the biggest apple.
18. Is Ahmet going to come, or not?
19. In Ahmet's opinion, should Selma come, or not?
20. Why don't you work harder?

Lesson 13

Postpositions. Expressions of Location

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Ahmet ile Mehmet beraber geldiler. | Ahmet and Mehmet came together. |
| 2. Ahmet ile Mehmet geldiler. | Ahmet and (with) Mehmet came. |
| 3. Ahmetle Mehmet geldiler. | Ahmet and (with) Mehmet came. |
| 4. Kalemim ile yazma! | Don't write with my pencil! |
| 5. Kalemimle yazma! | Don't write with my pencil! |
| 6. Bunun ile yazın! | Write with this (one)! |
| 7. Bununla yaz! | Write with this! |
| 8. Saat ondan evvel gelmiyecekler. | They won't come before ten o'clock. |
| 9. Otomobil bana doğru geldi. | The car came straight at me. |
| 10. Babası gibi, çocuk okumayı hiç sevmez. | (Just) like his father, the child doesn't like studying at all. |
| 11. Sizin gibi bir adam hiç gördüler mi? | Have they ever seen a man like you? |
| 12. Kitap büyük kutunun altında (dır). | The book is under the big box. |
| 13. Kitabı kutunun altından alınız. | Take the book from under the box. |
| 14. Kitabı kutunun arkasında buldunuz mu? | Did you find the book behind the box? |
| 15. Kitabı kutunun altına koyacaklar mı? | Will they put the book under the box? |
| 16. Kitaplarınızı kutunun içinde gördük. | We saw your books inside the box. |
-

I. Postpositions

Turkish postpositions—some of them suffixes, some of them independent words—follow substantives and govern them much as English prepositions govern the substantives which they precede.

Classified according to the suffixes which they require on the preceding substantives, Turkish postpositions are:

CLASS I: postpositions which require that the preceding substantive have the ablative suffix;

CLASS II: postpositions which require that the preceding substantive have the dative suffix; and

CLASS III: postpositions that require a preceding personal or interrogative pronoun or singular demonstrative pronoun to have the possessive suffix but that require no suffix on other preceding substantives.

The important postpositions include

CLASS I (ablative suffix on preceding substantive)

başka—other than, apart from, except for

benden başka

except for me

kitaplarımdan başka

apart from my books

Başka may also be an adjective.

başka bir kitap

another book

Contrast: *diğer kitap*

(the) other book

evvel—before (in time)

bizden evvel

before us, earlier than we

ondan evvel

before ten (before him, etc.)

saat ondan evvel

before ten o'clock

sonra—after

onlardan sonra

after them

saat altıdan sonra

after six o'clock

altı saatten sonra

after six hours

beri—subsequent to, since

on saatten beri

for (the) past ten hours

saat ondan beri

since ten o'clock

bin sekiz yüz altmış

since 1863

üçten beri

dolayı—because of

sizden dolayı

because of you

parasından dolayı

because of his money

CLASS II (dative suffix on preceding substantive)

kadar—up to, until, as far as

saat ona kadar

until ten o'clock

evime kadar

as far as my house

Kadar may also be a noun meaning 'amount.'

bu kadar

this much

ne kadar?

how much?

doğru—straight toward

bana doğru

right at me

evine doğru

straight toward his house

Doğru may also be a modifier meaning 'right,' 'true,' 'straight.'

doğru sözler

true words

karşı—against, opposite, anti-

bana karşı

against me

çocuklara karşı

against (the) children

göre—according to

onlara göre

according to them

gazeteye göre

according to the newspaper

rağmen—despite

ona rağmen

despite that

parasına rağmen

in spite of his money

nazaran—compared with, in regard to

İzmire nazaran Ankara daha

Compared with Izmir,

büyük(tür).

Ankara is larger.

CLASS III (no suffix on any preceding substantive except a personal pronoun, a singular interrogative pronoun, and a singular demonstrative pronoun—these require the possessive suffix)

ile—'with,' independent word, also used in the suffixed form -*l V2*.

After a final vowel, suffixed -*l V2* may become -*y l V2*. Both *ile* and

-(*y*) *l V2* frequently are followed by *beraber*, 'together': *ile beraber* or

-(*y*) *l V2 beraber*, 'together with.'

benim ile, benimle

with me

çocuk ile, çocukla

with (the) child

bunun ile beraber, bununla beraber

together with this, moreover

kitabı ile, kitabıyla

with his book

annesini ile, annesiyle

with his mother

NOTE: *İle* is frequently used to mean 'and': *Ahmet ile Mehmet*, 'Ahmet and Mehmet.'

gibi—like, similar to

<i>sizin gibi</i>	like you
<i>bunun gibi</i>	like this
<i>babası gibi</i>	like his father

için—for, for the purpose of, because of

<i>benim için</i>	for me, because of me
<i>bunun için</i>	for this, because of this
<i>çocuklar için</i>	for (the) children
<i>anlamak için</i>	for understanding

NOTE: *niçin* (from *ne için*) for what? why?

üzere (or) *üzere*—upon

<i>bunun üzerine</i>	upon this, thereupon
<i>gitmek üzere</i>	on the point of going, in order to go, on condition of going

2. Expressions of location

Much of the work of English prepositions is done in Turkish by nouns of place used in possessive constructions.

üst—top, upper part

<i>kutunun üstüne</i>	toward the top of the box
<i>kutunun üstünde</i>	on (the) top of the box
<i>kutunun üstünden</i>	from the top of the box
<i>Kitabım kutunun üstünde(dır).</i>	My book (is) on top of the box.
<i>Kitabımı kutunun üstüne koydular.</i>	They put my book on top of the box.

Üst may also be an adjective.

<i>üst kat</i>	top floor, top story
----------------	----------------------

alt—bottom, lower part

<i>Para o kitabın altında(dır).</i>	The money (is) under that book.
<i>Paranızı o kitabın altına koydu.</i>	He put your money under that box.
<i>Parayı o kitabın altından almadınız mı?</i>	Didn't you take the money from under that book?

Alt may also be an adjective.

<i>alt taraf</i>	bottom side
------------------	-------------

<i>yan</i> —side, (the) space or place next <i>Yanınızda iki çocuk gördüm.</i> <i>Yanıma gel!</i> <i>O köpek, sahibinin</i> <i>yanından hiç ayrılmaz.</i>	I saw two children beside you. Come here to me! That dog never goes away from his master's side.
<i>Yan</i> may also be an adjective. <i>yan kapı</i>	side door
<i>ara</i> —midst, space between <i>Aramızda, böyle bir şey</i> <i>hiç olmaz.</i> <i>Kalemimi iki kitabın</i> <i>arasına koydum.</i> <i>At, iki otomobilin</i> <i>arasından geçti.</i>	Between us, nothing of the sort will happen at all. I put my pencil between the two books. The horse went (passed) between the two cars.
Note this pattern: <i>Ankara ile İstanbul arasında</i> <i>kız ile babesinin arasında</i>	between Ankara and İstanbul between the girl and her father
<i>Ara</i> may also be an adjective. <i>ara kapı</i>	middle door
<i>iç</i> —(the) inside <i>Kutunun içinde ne buldunuz?</i> <i>Kitaplarımı büyük kutunun</i> <i>içine koydular.</i>	What did you find in (inside) the box? They put my books into the big box.
<i>İç</i> may also be an adjective. <i>iç kapı</i>	inside door
<i>dış</i> —(the) outside <i>Evi şehrin dışında(dır).</i>	His house (is) outside the city.
<i>Dış</i> may also be an adjective. <i>dış kapı</i>	outside door
<i>üzere</i> or <i>üzre</i> —the place or space over <i>Evinizin üzerinde büyük</i> <i>bir kuş gördüm.</i> <i>Evin üzerinden iki uçak</i> <i>geçti.</i>	I saw a big bird over your house. Two planes passed over the house.
<i>arka</i> —back part, space in back <i>Evinizin arkasında kimi</i> <i>gördüm?</i>	Whom did I see behind your house?

*Kutunun arkasına bir kitap
koydu.*

He put a book behind the box.

Çocuklar arkamdan geçtiler.

The children passed behind me.

Arka may also be an adjective.

arka kapı

back door

ön—front part, space in front

Evinizin önünde ne oldu?

What happened in front of
your house?

*Kitapları kutunun önüne
koyma!*

Don't put the books in front
of the box!

*Önümüzden iki otomobil
geçti.*

Two cars passed (crossed)
in front of us.

Ön may also be an adjective.

ön kapı

front door

Also note:

yukarı

up, space that is higher, upstairs

aşağı

opposite of *yukarı*

dışarı

outside, space that is out

içeri

opposite of *dışarı*

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Arkamızdan kim geçti?
2. Önümüzden geçmiyecekler mi?
3. Sizden sonra kim geldi?
4. Sizden dolayı, kardeşiniz de geç geldi.
5. Niçin bana bunun gibi bir elma vermedin?
6. Kutunun içinde ne buldunuz?
7. Gazeteyi cebinden aldı.
8. Evi dağın üstünde(dir).
9. Köpek sahibinin sesini bilir.
10. Benim için çay getirdiler.
11. Niçin saat sekizden evvel geldiler?
12. Çocuk babasının kalemiyle yazdı.
13. Niçin çalıştın?
14. Anlamak için, öğrenmek için çalıştık.
15. Bunun gibi bir kitap hiç okumadım.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. What did Ahmet put in his pocket?
2. Where did Selma find the teacups?
3. She found one cup in the box (and) the others behind it.
4. Who took my book?
5. Ahmet did.
6. Where did he put it?
7. He put it beside the tree.
8. Where's Nilüfer?
9. She's gone to the movies.
10. Did she go alone?
11. She did not.
12. With whom did she go?
13. She went with Ahmet's sister.
14. Will they be late?
15. No. They'll come here before 9:30.

Lesson 14

The Verb 'to Be.' *Var* and *Yok*.

The Resumptive Question

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Ahmet gençtir, değil mi? | Ahmet is young, isn't he? |
| 2. Onlar genç idiler. | They were young. |
| 3. Onlar gençtiler, değil mi? | They were young, weren't they? |
| 4. Siz Türk müsünüz, efendim? | Are you a Turk, sir? |
| 5. Evet, efendim, Türküm. | Yes, sir, I am Turkish. |
| 6. Annesi Fransız değil miydi? | Wasn't his mother French? |
| 7. Annesinin kaç evi vardır? | How many houses does his mother have? |
| 8. Bundan bir kaç sene evvel annesinin üç evi vardı, fakat bugün hiç bir evi yoktur. | A few years ago his mother owned three houses but today she has none at all. |
| 9. Babasının parası yok muydu? | Didn't her father have money? |
| 10. Vardı. | He did. |
| 11. Kitabım burada değil(dir). | My book is not here. |
| 12. Selmanın kitabı yok(tur). | Selma doesn't have a book. |
-

1. The verb 'to be'

The Turkish verb 'to be' is defective. It lacks the infinitive and several tenses. These missing forms may be replaced by corresponding forms of *olmak* 'to become.'

Some forms of 'to be' are suffixes. This is true of the present forms.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st person	-(y) V ⁴ m	-(y) V ⁴ z
2nd person	-s V ⁴ n	-s V ⁴ n V ⁴ z
3rd person	-t/d V ⁴ r	-t/d V ⁴ r l V ² r

NOTE: The third singular and plural are frequently omitted. (See Lesson 3, section 3.)

The indefinite article (*bir*) is not used

a. with negative of 'to be'

Çocuk değilim. I'm not a child.

b. with expressions of occupation, nationality, etc.

Amerikalıyım. I am an American.

The generic is frequently used where English expects a plural.

Talebeyiz. We are students.

PRESENT POSITIVE

singular

1st	Gençim.	I am young.	Talebeyim.	I am a student.
2nd	Gençsin.		Talebesin.	
3rd	Gençtir.		Talebedir.	

plural

1st	Gençiz.	Talebeyiz.
2nd	Gençsiniz.	Talebesiniz.
3rd	Gençtirler.	Talebedirler.

PRESENT INTERROGATIVE

singular

1st	Genç miyim?	Talebe miyim?
2nd	Genç misin?	Talebe misin?
3rd	Genç midir?	Talebe midir?

plural

1st	Genç miyiz?	Talebe miyiz?
2nd	Genç misiniz?	Talebe misiniz?
3rd	Genç midirler?	Talebe midirler?

In the past, the verb 'to be' has two sets of forms: those that are suffixes and those that are independent words. Their meanings are identical.

ENCLITIC FORM		INDEPENDENT FORM	
singular			
1st	-t/d V ⁴ m	idim	I was
2nd	-t/d V ⁴ n	idin	you were
3rd	-t/d V ⁴	idi	he, she, it was
plural			
1st	-t/d V ⁴ k	idik	we were
2nd	-t/d V ⁴ n V ⁴ z	idiniz	you were
3rd	-t/d V ⁴ l V ² r	idiler	they were

PAST POSITIVE			
singular			
1st	Gençtim.	Genç idim.	
2nd	Gençtin.	Genç idin.	
3rd	Gençti.	Genç idi.	
plural			
1st	Gençtik.	Genç idik.	
2nd	Gençtiniz.	Genç idiniz.	
3rd	Gençtiler.	Genç idiler.	

In the case of a substantive ending in a vowel (e.g., *talebe* 'student'), a *y* is inserted between the final vowel and the past suffixes.

singular			
1st	Talebeydim.	Talebe idim.	
2nd	Talebeydin.	Talebe idin.	
3rd	Talebeydi.	Talebe idi.	
plural			
1st	Talebeydik.	Talebe idik.	
2nd	Talebeydiniz.	Talebe idiniz.	
3rd	Talebeydiler.	Talebe idiler.	

A *y* is also inserted between the interrogative syllable and the past suffixed forms.

Genç miydiler?

With 'to be,' the negative is always *değil* 'not.'

PRESENT NEGATIVE		PAST NEGATIVE		
singular				
1st	Genç değilim.	Genç değildim.	or	değil idim.
2nd	Genç değilsin.	Genç değildin.		değil idin.
3rd	Genç değildir.	Genç değildi.		değil idi.

plural

1st	Genç değiliz.	Genç değildik.	or	değil idik.
2nd	Genç değilsiniz.	Genç değildiniz.		değil idiniz.
3rd	Genç değildirler.	Genç değildiler.		değil idiler.

PRESENT NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE

PAST NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE

singular

1st	Genç değil miyim?	Genç değil miydim?	or	değil mi idim?
2nd	Genç değil misin?	Genç değil miydin?		değil mi idin?
3rd	Genç değil midir?	Genç değil miydi?		değil mi idi?

plural

1st	Genç değil miyiz?	Genç değil miydik?	or	değil mi idik?
2nd	Genç değil misiniz?	Genç değil miydiniz?		değil mi idiniz?
3rd	Genç değil midirler?	Genç değil miydiler?		değil mi idiler?

2. *Var* and *yok*

The two words *var* 'extant,' 'in existence' and *yok* 'non-extant,' 'not in existence' are of remarkable frequency and importance in Turkish.

Their principal functions are to express: possession, the verb 'to have' and the English 'there is' and 'there are.'

Var and *yok* are always used with some form of the verb 'to be'—understood if not expressed. In the third present, singular and plural, the verb form is usually not expressed.

Bir çocuğum var(dır).

Çocuğum var mı(dır)?

Ahmedin iki çocuğu var(dır).

İki çocuğumuz var(dır).

Çocuğunuz var mı(dır)?

Onların bir çocukları var(dır).

Çocuğum yok(tur).

Çocuğu yok mu(dur)?

Bir çocuğum vardı (var idi).

Ahmedin bir çocuğu yok muydu?

Evde ne var(dır)?

Evde beş kutu var(dır).

Evde ne vardı?

Evde beş kutu vardı.

Sizde para var mı(dır)?

I have a child.

Have you a child?

Ahmet has two children.

We have two children.

Do you have children?

They have one child.

I have no children.

Doesn't he have a child?

I had a child.

Didn't Ahmet have a child?

What is there in the house?

There are five boxes in the house.

What was there in the house?

There were five boxes in the house.

Do you have any money ('on you')?

Sizde para yok mu(dur)?

Don't you have any money with you?

Ahmette hiç para yoktu (yok idi).

Ahmet didn't have any money with him.

Mehmette çok para vardı (var idi).

Mehmet had a lot of money with him.

Mehmedin çok parası vardı (var idi).

Mehmet was very rich (had a lot of money).

3. The resumptive question

In English one repeats a verb in the interrogative in order to gather up the conversation and proceed. In Turkish, the same effect is produced, for any verb, simply by adding *değil mi?* (compare French 'n'est-ce pas?').

Gitti, değil mi?

He went, didn't he?

Gelmiyecekler, değil mi?

They won't come, will they?

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Otomobiliniz nerede, Ahmet Bey?
2. Otomobilim yok, efendim. Vardı fakat onu sattım.
3. Otomobiliniz iyi miydi, Ahmet Bey?
4. İyi değildi. Çok eskiydi. Onun için sattım.
5. Küçük Selma nerede, Mihri Hanım?
6. Burada değildir. Selmayı bugün görmedim.
7. Fakat bugün buraya gelecek, değil mi?
8. Evet, Mihri Hanım, inşallah gelecek.
9. Dün öğleden sonra evinizde kim vardı?
10. Mehmet vardı. Ahmet vardı. Bir kaç arkadaş geldiler. Oturduk, konuştuk. O kadar . . .
11. İki kızkardeşiniz var, değil mi?
12. Hayır, yalnız bir kızkardeşim var, fakat kocamın iki kızkardeşi var.
13. Türkiyede elma var mı?
14. Evet, hem de çok elma var.
15. Bahçenizde iki elma ağacı var, değil mi?

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Whose book is this?
2. Who doesn't have a book?

3. These are yours, aren't they?
4. These aren't yours, are they?
5. She had four sisters, didn't she?
6. Your book is at my house.
7. There are no books in their house.
8. Ahmet's father has two automobiles.
9. Your father didn't have an automobile, did he?
10. Is Ahmet there?

Lesson 15

The Suffixes -l V⁴, -s V⁴ z, and -l V⁴ k.

Past Indefinite, Past Narrative,
and Past Perfect Verb Forms

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Yaşlı kadın ölmüş. | The aged woman (reportedly) has died (died, is dead). |
| 2. Yaşlı kadın ölmüştür. | The aged woman died. (narrative) |
| 3. Yaşlı kadın ölmüştü.
(<i>Yaşlı kadın ölmüş idi.</i>) | The aged woman had died. |
| 4. Bugün hava yağmurludur. | Today the weather is rainy. |
| 5. Siz Ankaralı mısınız?
Evet, Ankaralıyım. | Are you from Ankara?
Yes, I am from Ankara. |
| 6. Ahmet gitmiş mi? | Has Ahmet gone (so far as you know)? |
| Her halde gitmiş. | Certainly he seems to have gone. |
| 7. Ha! Ben onunla beraber gitmişim! Öyle mi? | So! I'm supposed to have gone with him! (I allegedly went with him!) Is that how it is? |
| 8. Bir varmış, bir yokmuş. Allahın kulu çokmuş . . . | Once upon a time . . . (Once there was, once there wasn't, they say: but God's slaves are many . . .) |
| 9. Radyonuz kaç lambalı? | How many tubes does your radio have? |
| 10. Eski ev elektrikli mi, elektriksiz mi? | Does the old house have electricity or not? |
-

1. The suffix -l V⁴

The suffix -l V⁴ (whose meaning is the opposite of -s V⁴ z, see section 2, below) forms adjectives meaning 'having,' 'possessed of.'

<i>para</i>	money	<i>paralı</i>	rich
<i>ev</i>	house	<i>evli</i>	married (has a home)
<i>elektrik</i>	electricity	<i>elektrikli</i>	electrified, wired for electricity
<i>yaş</i>	age (of a human)	<i>yaşlı</i>	aged

2. The suffix -s V⁴ z

This suffix, the opposite of the suffix -l V⁴, forms adjectives meaning 'without,' 'deprived of,' '-less.'

<i>parasız</i>	moneyless	<i>tuzsuz</i>	salt free
<i>susuz</i>	waterless, thirsty	<i>şekersiz</i>	without sugar

3. The suffix -l V⁴ k

This suffix forms nouns, usually abstract.

<i>evli</i>	married	<i>evlilik</i>	matrimony
<i>öğretmen</i>	teacher	<i>öğretmenlik</i>	profession of being a teacher
<i>büyük</i>	large	<i>büyüklik</i>	largeness, size; adulthood; greatness
<i>göz</i>	eye	<i>gözlük</i>	eyepiece, glasses
<i>parasız</i>	moneyless	<i>parasızlık</i>	poverty
<i>susuz</i>	arid	<i>susuzluk</i>	waterlessness, thirst

Note also:

<i>satılık ev</i>	house for sale
<i>kiralık ev</i>	house for rent
<i>şimdilik</i>	for the present, for now
<i>beş kişilik otomobil</i>	five-passenger car
<i>günlük gazete</i>	daily newspaper

4. Past indefinite verb forms

Turkish seldom expresses past time without simultaneously specifying one aspect of what happened, which English usually ignores. This aspect is the definiteness of the speaker's (or writer's) knowledge of what happened.

The word *gitti* (past definite) means 'He (definitely) went.' The corresponding past indefinite form means 'He (apparently, allegedly, reportedly, presumably, or ostensibly) went (*but* I am not sure enough of this assertion to be able honestly to say *gitti*).'

The past indefinite verb forms use these suffixes

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
1st	-m V ⁴ § V ⁴ m	-m V ⁴ § V ⁴ z	
2nd	-m V ⁴ § s V ⁴ n	-m V ⁴ § s V ⁴ n V ⁴ z	
3rd	-m V ⁴ §	-m V ⁴ § l V ² r	

	POSITIVE		NEGATIVE
singular			
1st	Gitmişim.	I (allegedly) went, did go, have gone.	Gitmemişim.
2nd	Gitmişsin.	You (reportedly) went, did go, have gone.	Gitmemişsin.
3rd	Gitmiş.		Gitmemiş.
plural			
1st	Gitmişiz.		Gitmemişiz.
2nd	Gitmişsiniz.		Gitmemişsiniz.
3rd	Gitmişler.		Gitmemişler.

	INTERROGATIVE	NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE
singular		
1st	Gitmiş miyim?	Gitmemiş miyim?
2nd	Gitmiş misin?	Gitmemiş misin?
3rd	Gitmiş mi?	Gitmemiş mi?
plural		
1st	Gitmiş miyiz?	Gitmemiş miyiz?
2nd	Gitmiş misiniz?	Gitmemiş misiniz?
3rd	Gitmişler mi?	Gitmemişler mi?

5. Past narrative verb forms

The preceding verb forms—past indefinite—with the addition of only a final -t/d V⁴ r to the third singular and plural, provide a past narrative tense much used by newspapers and storytellers.

The past narrative verb forms (third person) are

	POSITIVE		NEGATIVE
singular			
3rd	<i>Gitmiştir.</i>	He went.	<i>Gitmemiştir.</i> He did not go.

plural

3rd *Gitmişlerdir.*

Gitmemişlerdir.

singular

3rd *Gitmiş midir?*

Gitmemiş midir?

plural

3rd *Gitmiş midirler?*

Gitmemiş midirler?

6. Past perfect verb forms

Combining the verb form ending in -m V⁴ş (the past participle; see Lesson 16, section 2) with the past of the verb 'to be' produces a verb form whose tense value is well back in the past. According to context it may be understood as past ('I went') or, frequently, as past perfect ('I had gone').

The past perfect verb forms are

	POSITIVE		NEGATIVE
singular			
1st	Gitmiştim.	I had gone.	Gitmemiştim. I had not gone.
2nd	Gitmiştin.		Gitmemiştin.
3rd	Gitmişti.		Gitmemişti.
plural			
1st	Gitmiştik.		Gitmemiştik.
2nd	Gitmiştiniz.		Gitmemiştiniz.
3rd	Gitmişlerdi.		Gitmemişlerdi.
	INTERROGATIVE		NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE
	<i>Gitmiş miydin? etc.</i>		<i>Gitmemiş miydin? etc.</i>

In addition, the independent forms of the past verb 'to be' may be used.

POSITIVE		NEGATIVE	
<i>Bulmuş idim.</i>	I had found.	<i>Bulmamış idim.</i>	I had not found.
etc.		etc.	

Negative forms may use the word *değil*.

Gitmiş değildim. (or *Gitmemiştim.*) I had not gone.
etc.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Kardeşinizin yatak odası yukarıda mı, aşağıda mı?
2. Kızkardeşimizi gördünüz mü?
3. Parayı kutunun altından kim aldı?

4. Ahmet dün sabah buraya gelmiş, bunu demiş, şunu demiş, sonra kız-kardeşimin parasını almış ve gitmiştir. (The final *-tir* serves for all verbs. See above section 5.)
5. Ahmede göre, onlar buraya gelmezler.
6. Tramvayın ön tarafında iki yer bulduk.
7. Çocuğum, bugün içeriye girme!
8. 1937 senesinden evvel İstanbulla gitmemiş miydi?
9. Su, ağzına kadar çıktı.
10. Sana göre, kızkardeşim Ahmedin otomobiline binmedi.
11. Ondan başka, ne istediler?
12. Niçin gelmiyecekler?
13. Buraya pek gelmek istemiyecekler.
14. Çay fincanlarının içlerine ne koydu?
15. Tren, istasyonda beş dakika kaldı.
16. Siz çoktan beri Türkiye'ye gitmediniz.
17. Eviniz bahçeli mi(dır)?
18. Bundan beş gün evvel çocuklar seyahate çıktılar.
19. Bu ev satılık mı(dır), kiralık mı(dır)?
20. İstanbulun günlük gazeteleri çok.
21. Fakirliğime rağmen, ben o adamdan para almam!
22. Ahmet ve Erdoğan İstanbulla gitmek için çok çalışmışlar.
23. Büyük kutu yanınızda kalsın mı?
Evet, bir iki hafta kadar kalsın.
24. Trenin önünden geçme!
25. Çocuklar, dış kapıyı açmayınız, lûtfen!

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Mehmet, has Ahmet gone to Istanbul?
I didn't see him. But he certainly seems to have gone.
Erdoğan, did you see Ahmet?
I did, sir. He didn't go to Istanbul; he went to Edirne.
2. Do you want your coffee with or without sugar?
3. I like tea with lemon.
4. This café au lait is very good.
5. Had Ahmet's brother died before 1955?
6. In 1949 I had two houses. Now I have three. (There are three of them.)
7. At that time you weren't married, were you?
8. My father always desired goodness, rightness, and beauty.
9. According to Ahmet, he hasn't gone.
10. According to Ahmet, he hadn't gone.

Lesson 16

The Partitive. Participles. Gerund in -t/d V⁴ k.

Indirect Discourse. Relative Gerundive and Adverb

-
- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Kitaplarımızdan hangisini aldılar? | Which (one) of your books did they take? |
| 2. Kitaplarımızdan hangilerini istedi? | Which (ones) of your books did he want? |
| 3. Birisi gitti mi? | Did somebody go? |
| 4. Birçoğunu anlamadım. | I didn't understand a good deal of it. |
| 5. Geçen sene buraya gelmediler, değil mi? | Last year they didn't come here, did they? |
| 6. Gelecek sene ne olacak? | What will happen next year? |
| 7. Evimize gelmediği için parayı ona vermedik. | Because he didn't come to our house, we didn't give him the money. |
| 8. Ahmedin dün gelmediğini söylediniz. | You said that Ahmet didn't (hadn't) come yesterday. |
| 9. Ahmedin dün geleceğini söylediniz. | You said that Ahmet would (was going to) come yesterday. |
| 10. Ahmedin bugün geleceğini dün söylediniz. | Yesterday you said that Ahmet would (will) come today. |
| 11. Ahmedin yarın geleceğini size söyleyecekler. | They'll tell you that Ahmet is coming (will come) tomorrow. |
| 12. Gördüğümüz adamın evi yok mudur? | Doesn't the man whom we saw have a house? |
| 13. Söylediklerinden yarısını anlamadım. | I didn't understand half of the things that they said. |

14. **Babası Ankaraya gidecek olan çocuk hasta oldu.**

The child whose father is going (will go) to Ankara took (became) sick.

15. **Ankaraya gidecek olanlar istasyona saat 7den evvel gelsinler.**

People who are going to Ankara should come to the station before 7:00.

1. The partitive

The English partitive construction, e.g., 'one of a number,' 'part of a whole' has as its usual Turkish counterpart this pattern.

onlardan biri one of them (from them)

The ablative expresses the idea 'from the whole'; the incomplete possessive construction (no expressed first member) expresses the part.

aralarından biri one of them (from their midst)

In this usage, a word may bear what appear to be two possessive suffixes.

aralarından birisi one of them

The word *birisi* also means 'someone,' 'somebody.'

Birisi gitmiş. (Apparently) somebody went.

Birisi gitti. Somebody (definitely) went.

Similar forms include

<i>bazı</i>	some	<i>bazısı</i>	some of it, of them
<i>kim?</i>	who?	<i>Kimi geldi, kimi gelmedi.</i>	Some of them came and some didn't.
<i>başka</i>	other	<i>bir başkası</i>	another of them, some other one
<i>hep</i>	all	<i>hepsi</i>	all of it, of them
		<i>hepiniz</i>	all of you
<i>her</i>	each, every	<i>her biri</i>	each one (of them)
<i>birçok</i>	a lot	<i>birçoğu</i>	a lot of it (of them)
	Compare	<i>birçokları</i>	a lot of them

2. Participles

The third person singular, positive and negative of the (a) general verb forms, (b) past indefinite verb forms, and (c) future verb forms may be used as verbal adjectives (participles).

<i>akar su</i>	water which flows; running water
<i>okumuş (olan) bir adam</i>	man who has read; educated man
(olan—present participle of <i>olmak</i> —may be used or omitted as one chooses.)	
<i>gelecek sene (or) gelecek olan sene</i>	next year, coming year, year that will come
<i>geçmiş zaman</i>	time that has passed; past tense
<i>bitmez iş</i>	work that does not end; endless task
<i>seni anlayacak bir kız</i>	a girl who'll understand you

Any participle, when it modifies no expressed word, may become a substantive and, in that event, may take suffixes.

<i>yazarın evi</i>	the writer's house
<i>yazarların evleri</i>	the writers' houses
<i>Olacak oldu.</i>	What was to happen happened.

The present participle is formed by the suffix *-(y) V² n* added to the positive or negative verb stem.

NOTE: The buffer *(y)* alters an immediately preceding *a* to *i*, and an immediately preceding *e* to *i*.

POSITIVE		NEGATIVE
<i>giden</i>	going, one who goes	<i>gitmiyen</i>
<i>bilen</i>	knowing, one who knows	<i>bilmiyen</i>
<i>anlıyan</i>	understanding, one who understands	<i>anlamıyan</i>
<i>istiyen</i>	desiring, one who desires	<i>istemiyen</i>

A participle (verbal adjective) not only modifies words (its adjectival function) but also may exert verb force (can require other words to take suffixes).

<i>oraya giden adamlar</i>	(the) men who go there
<i>Ankaraya gidenler</i>	those who go to Ankara
<i>Ankaradan gelen iki kadın</i>	(the) two women coming from Ankara

3. Gerund in *-t/d V⁴ k*

The gerund (verbal noun) in *-t/d V⁴ k* is almost always second member of a possessive construction. The principal exception to this is when such a gerund is governed by the postposition *sonra* 'after.'

<i>gittikten sonra</i>	after going, after having gone.
------------------------	---------------------------------

The time value of this gerund varies. It may express present or past time. The third person singular future serves as the future gerund.

<i>geldiğimde</i>	when I come, came, do come, did come, etc.
-------------------	--

*her gittiğimde
gelmediğinizden dolayı*

at my every going, whenever I go, went, etc.
because of your not coming, not having
come, etc.

*Ahmedin gelmiyeceğinden
dolayı*

because Ahmet isn't going to come, won't
come

4. Indirect discourse

The gerund in -t/d V⁴ k (for past and present tenses) and the future gerund (for the future tense) are the usual ways of expressing indirect discourse. The usual verb indicating indirect discourse is *söylemek* (*söyler*). That of direct discourse is *demek*.

Study carefully the following examples.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Ahmet, 'Mehmet paramı aldı,' dedi. | Ahmet said, 'Mehmet took my money.' |
| 2. Ahmet, Mehmedin parasını aldığı söyledi. | Ahmet said that Mehmet had taken his money. |
| 3. Ahmet, 'Mehmet hırsızdır,' dedi. | Ahmet said, 'Mehmet's a thief.' |
| 4. Ahmet, Mehmedin hırsız olduğunu söyledi. | Ahmet said that Mehmet's a thief. |
| 5. Ahmet, 'Mehmet paranızı alacak, Selma,' dedi. | Ahmet said, 'Selma, Mehmet'll take your money.' |
| 6. Ahmet, Selmaya Mehmedin parasını alacağını söyledi. | Ahmet told Selma that Mehmet will (would) take her money. |

NOTE: In the above examples of indirect discourse, the subject of the dependent indirect construction becomes first member of a type I possessive construction, e.g., in sentences 2, 4, and in 6 the noun *Mehmedin*.

Note the type II possessive construction when the gerund is governed by a postposition.

*Babam, Ahmet gelmediği
için bana yazdı.*

My father wrote me because Ahmet
didn't come.

5. Relative gerundive and adverb

When the verb form in -t/d V⁴ k modifies an expressed word, this form serves as verbal adjective (gerundive). This form seldom appears without some other suffix or suffixes added.

Used with possessive suffixes, this gerundive is called the relative gerundive.

Turkish has no single words equivalent to the English relative pronouns ('who,' 'which,' 'that') or the English relative adverbs ('when,' 'where').

The boy who came. The girl whose mother came. The house that I saw.
The day when we went. The house where I found you.

For the Turkish interrogative pronouns and adverbs, to be distinguished from the relatives, see Lesson 7, section 2, Lesson 8, section 5.

The English nominative (absolute, subject of a verb) relative pronoun is expressed in Turkish in the participle. As an attributive adjective the participle precedes the noun.

<i>gelen adam</i>	man who is coming, who comes
<i>gelecek adam</i>	man who will come
<i>akar su</i>	water that (which) flows

An English possessive or objective relative pronoun is expressed in Turkish in the relative gerundive with a possessive suffix.

OBJECTIVE RELATIVE PRONOUN

	<i>gördüğüm adam</i>	(the) man whom I saw
full form:	<i>benim onu gördüğüm adam</i>	
	<i>gördüğün adam</i>	(the) man whom you saw
full form:	<i>senin onu gördüğün adam</i>	
	<i>gördüğü adam</i>	etc.
	<i>gördüğümüz adam</i>	
	<i>gördüğünüz adam</i>	
	<i>gördükleri adam</i>	

POSSESSIVE RELATIVE PRONOUN

	<i>kitabını aldığı adam</i>	(the) man whose book
full form:	<i>benim onun kitabını aldığı adam</i>	I took
	<i>kitabını aldığın adam</i>	(the) man whose book
full form:	<i>senin onun kitabını aldığın adam</i>	you took
	<i>kitabını aldığı adam</i>	etc.
	<i>kitabını aldığımız adam</i>	
	<i>kitabını aldığınız adam</i>	
	<i>kitabını aldıkları adam</i>	

NOTE: In indirect discourse the interrogative pronoun (*kim?* 'who?') appears as follows:

1. *Ahmet, 'Kim geldi?' dedi.*

Ahmet said, 'Who came?'

2. *Ahmet kimin geldiğini sordu.*

Ahmet asked who had come
(who came).

3. *Ahmet bu kitabın kimin olduğunu sordu.*

Ahmet asked whose book this
was.

RELATIVE ADVERBS

geldiğim gün

(the) day (when, on which)

I came

geldiğin zaman

(the) time (when, at which)

you came

gitmediği halde

in (the) event that he didn't

go, although he didn't

go, hasn't gone, hadn't

gone

geldiğim gibi

as soon as I came

Second only to the possessive construction (see Lesson 10), the greatest difficulty with which Turkish confronts the English speaker is the expression of the possessive and objective relative pronouns and of the relative adjectives. Careful study of the patterns given above will do much to smooth the student's path.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. *Yeni gelenin ismi ne(dir)?*
2. *Ahmedin dün geldiğini bana söylemediler.*
3. *Sizin paranızı bulacağınızı ümit ettik.*
4. *Evinizi kiraya verdiğiniz adamın ismi ne?*
5. *Bunlardan hangisini istediler?*
6. *Bunu iyi bilenler az(dır).*
7. *Beyoğluna gitmek isteyenler kaç kişi?*
8. *Kimin geldiğini görmediniz mi?*
9. *Öğretmen, çocuklarımızın derslerine çok çalıştıklarını bize söyledi.*
10. *Babam, Ahmet buraya gelmediğinden dolayı bana bir mektup yazdı.*
11. *Gördüğünüz şehirlerden hangisi en güzel?*
12. *Dün gelmiş olan adamın otomobilini evimin önünde görmediniz mi?*
13. *Evinizi satın aldığınız kadın Fransaya gitti mi?*
14. *Buraya bir kaç defa geldikleri halde onlara hiç bir şey vermedik.*
15. *En güzel elmaları kimin satın aldığını söyledi mi?*
16. *Böyle bir şey yüz senede bir olmaz.*

17. Kapıda kimi gördün?

Birisi bundan yarım saat evvel gelmiş, efendim.

18. Trene binecek olanlar burada beklesinler.

19. Trene binecek olanların burada bekliyeceklerini söyledi.

20. Ahmedin parasını bulan kızın annesi parayı bana verdi.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Who (is it who) wants the biggest of these apples?

2. What is the name of the woman to whom you sold your house?

3. Where did the man whose house you bought live?

4. Who broke the cup into which I had put the milk?

5. Ahmet didn't see who came.

6. Ahmet said he didn't see who came.

7. Ahmet asked me who was coming.

8. After phoning you I left the house.

9. Because you know Turkish well, will you please write them a letter?

10. He said that he would write them a letter.

Lesson 17

-ki. Ki. Çünkü. The Professional Doer.

The Habitual Doer. Diminutives. Noun of Manner

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Dünkü yağmur çok iyi oldu. | Yesterday's rain was certainly good. |
| 2. Bunlar seninkiler mi? | Are these yours? |
| 3. Babanız gazeteci midir?
Hayır. Kitapçıdır. | Is your father a journalist?
No, he's a book dealer. |
| 4. Yazıcınız buraya gelsin, bu yazdığı mektubu bana okusun! | Have your secretary come here and read me this letter that she (he) wrote! |
| 5. Ahmedin söylediğine göre, gelmiyecekler. | According to what Ahmet says (said), they won't come. |
| 6. Bir parçacık ekmek yemez misiniz? | Won't you eat just a tiny bit of bread? |
| 7. Kadıncağыз gelmesin! | I (we) hope that the poor woman won't come! |
| 8. Ufacık topla oynadılar. | They played with a tiny ball. |
| 9. Giriş (kapısı) hangi tarafta? | Where (which way) is the entrance? |
| 10. Öğretmen çocuğunuzun çok anlayışlı olduğunu söyledi. | The teacher said that your child is very perceptive. |
-

I. *-ki*

The suffix *-ki* (an element which does not conform to vowel harmony) has three principal uses.

- a. Attached to a substantive, it forms an adjective.

<i>sabahki hava</i>	morning weather
<i>evvelki gün</i>	previous day
<i>dünkü yağmur</i>	yesterday's rain

With *dün* 'yesterday' and *gün* 'day' *ki*- does conform to vowel harmony.

- b. Attached to a locative suffix, it forms an adjectival expression.

<i>Amerikadaki çocuklar</i>	(the) children in America,
	(the) children who are in America
<i>ağaçtaki çiçekler</i>	(the) flowers in the tree,
	(the) flowers which are in the tree
<i>Ağaçtakiler güzeldir.</i>	The ones in the tree are pretty.
<i>Bu fotoğraflardakilerden misiniz?</i>	Are you one of those who are in these photos?

- c. Attached to the possessive forms of nouns and personal pronouns, *-ki* produces the equivalents of English 'X's,' 'mine,' 'yours,' etc.

<i>Ahmedinki nerede?</i>	Where is Ahmet's?
<i>O benimkidir.</i>	That's mine.
<i>Benimkiler bunlar.</i>	These are mine.
<i>Seninki nerededir?</i>	Where's yours?
<i>Onunki yoktur.</i>	He hasn't got one.
<i>Bu onunkidir.</i>	This one is his.
<i>Bizimkiler bunlar.</i>	These are ours.
<i>Bu bizimkidir.</i>	This is ours.
<i>Onlar sizinkiler,</i>	Those are yours,
<i>değil mi?</i>	aren't they?
<i>Onlarinkiler nerede?</i>	Where are theirs?
<i>Onlarınkı bu mudur?</i>	Is this one theirs?

When further suffixes are attached to forms in *-ki*, a buffer *n* is used.

<i>Ahmedinkini kim gördü?</i>	Who has seen Ahmet's?
-------------------------------	-----------------------

2. *Ki*

The Persian relative 'kih' 'that' has been taken into Turkish as *ki*, along with its grammar.

<i>İsmi Hasan olan bir adam vardı.</i>	There was a man whose name was Hasan.
--	---------------------------------------

Contrast <i>Bir adam vardı ki ismi Hasan idi.</i>	There was a man whose name was Hasan (that his name was . . .).
---	---

Ki sometimes 'ends' an unfinished expression.

O kadar gördük ki!

We saw so much that (I can't begin to tell you)!

3. *Çünkü*

The Persian '*çünkü*' 'because' also imports non-Turkish grammar into Turkish.

*Hava fena olduğu için
gitmedik.*

Because the weather was bad, we
didn't go.

Contrast *Gitmedik çünkü hava
fena idi.*

We didn't go, because the weather
was bad.

NOTE: *Zira*, also borrowed from Persian, is used in the same way as *çünkü*. Foreigners learning or using Turkish should avoid overuse of *ki*, *çünkü*, and *zira*. No matter how aptly the non-Turk may use these words, he will always be vulnerable to the charge 'That's not Turkish.'

4. The professional doer

The suffix *-ç/c V⁴* added to a noun forms the noun which names the individual 'who does,' the professional. This suffix is frequently followed by *-l V⁴ k* to form the name of the profession.

gazete
newspaper

gazeteci
journalist

gazetecilik
journalism

banka
bank

bankacı
banker

bankacılık
banking, the banking business

kitap
book

kitapçı
bookseller

kitapçılık
the book business

5. The habitual doer

The suffix *-(y) V⁴ c V⁴* added to a verb stem forms the noun of the habitual doer, the individual who customarily or habitually performs the action involved, or who incites others to do so.

yazıcı

writer, secretary, scribe (from *yazmak* 'to write')

görücü

(looker) the matchmaker of old-fashioned Turkish life,
go-between (from *görmek* 'to see')

6. Diminutives

Turkish makes extensive use of diminutives. They indicate smallness, affection, sarcasm, or contempt. The usual suffix is -ç/c V⁴ k.

<i>oda</i>	room	<i>odacık</i>	little room
<i>Hasan</i>		<i>Hasancık</i>	little Hasan, good old Hasan, pal Hasan
<i>Mehmet</i>		<i>Mehmetçik</i>	Turkey's GI Joe, Tommy Atkins
<i>şair</i>	poet	<i>şaircik</i>	poetaster, poetizer

A final *k* may drop out before the diminutive suffix.

<i>ufak</i>	small	<i>ufacık</i>	tiny
<i>küçük</i>	little	<i>küçücük</i>	tiny
<i>mini</i>	tiny	<i>minicik</i>	very tiny
		<i>mini minicik</i>	minuscule

Another diminutive suffix is -ç/c V² ğ i/ı z. It is usually used pityingly.

<i>kadın</i>	woman	<i>kadıncağız</i>	poor woman
--------------	-------	-------------------	------------

7. Noun of manner

The suffix -(y) V⁴ ş added to a verb stem forms the noun of manner.

<i>gidiş</i>	going, way of going
<i>anlayış</i>	penetration, way of understanding
<i>giriş</i>	entrance, way of going in
<i>çıkış</i>	exit, way of leaving

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Sizin gelmemenize rağmen, Ahmet parayı istemiyecek, değil mi?
2. Saati demir kutunun içinde bulacaksınız.
3. Anahtarı kapıcıdan alacağım, değil mi?
4. Otomobilin yok mu?
5. Fahrünnisanın o gün geleceğini bilmediler, değil mi?
6. Hangisini istedi?
7. Bunlar onunkiler değildir.
8. Renginin bembeyaz olduğunu söyledi.

9. Bunlardan en güzelini istediği bellidir.
10. Selma, buraya geldiği gün, Fahrünnisaya iki kilo kahve verdi.
11. Benimkiler sizinkilerden iyidir.
12. Okuduğunuz kitabı nereye koyduğunuzu söylemez misiniz?
13. Okuduğum, kitap değildi. Ben bir haftalık mecmua okudum.
14. O adamın parası çokmuş. Babası da zenginmiş.
15. Babası zengin olduğu halde, Ahmedin çok parası yokmuş.
16. Buraya geldikten sonra, lisanı çok çabuk öğreneceksiniz.
17. Otomobilimi ona sattığım adamın kızının ismi Selmadır.
18. Ben onu görür görmez, Ahmet geldi.
19. Evinizdeki kitaplardan hangilerini alsınlar?
20. Bu küçücük haliya kaç para istedi?
21. Giriş nerede?
22. Erdoğanın söylediğine göre, onların evi çok güzelmiş.
23. Bu, böyle olacak bir şey değildir.
24. 'Ahmedin bana verdiği kitabı okumam' demeyin.
25. Mehmet, Ahmedin ona verdiği kitabı okumamıştı.
26. Bu evin kirası kaç?
Bu ev kiralık değildir.
Efendim, bütün şehirde kiralık ev yok mu?
Çok az var, fakat caminin karşısında iki tanesini bulacaksınız.
Size göre, ikisinden hangisi daha iyi?
Fikrimce, küçüğü iyidir.
27. İçtikleri suyu beğenmediler.
28. Sinema nasıl idi? Onu beğendiniz mi?
29. Yanlarındakiler kimler?
30. Onlar İstanbullu değillermiş, Antalyadan gelmişler.
31. Böyle şeyler söyleyecek bir kadın değildir.
32. Eski evlerin iki kısmı vardır: birisi selâmlık, yani erkeklerin kısmı; diğer kısım harem, yani kadınların kısmı.
33. Çocukluğumdan beri sinemaya hiç gitmedim.
34. 'Gelsin! Gelsin!' desinler. Ben gitmem.
35. Ondan hiç haber olmadığımı söyleyecekler.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Mother dear, please come here!
2. The apple trees in my garden are larger than those in yours.
3. The photographers all went to Ankara together.
4. This building has three exits.

5. Selma told me that her father is going to buy a new car.
6. Since Mehmet didn't come, I hope that Ahmet won't come either.
7. Doesn't your father have a secretary?
8. I didn't like the movie we saw last night.
9. Because the weather is very bad, we're not going to go to see them.
10. How much money did he want for the one in the bedroom?

Lesson 18

Progressive Verb Forms.

Common Infinitive plus the Locative with 'to Be.'

Ordinals and Distributives. Gerundive in -(y) V²

-
- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Ne diyorsunuz? Ahmet gitsin mi, gitmesin mi? | What do you say? Ought Ahmet to go or not? |
| 2. Nereye gidiyorlar? | Where are they going? |
| 3. Beş seneden beri Türkiyede oturuyorduk. | We had been living in Turkey for five years. |
| 4. Ankarada mı oturuyor? | Does he live in Ankara? |
| 5. Gazeteyi okumakta idiler. | They were reading the paper. |
| 6. Ahmet İstanbula geldiği gün, ben Ankaraya dönmek üzereydim. | The day Ahmet came to Istanbul, I was just ready to go back to Ankara. |
| 7. Atınız dokuzuncu geldi, sonuncu geldi. | Your horse came in ninth—last. |
| 8. Çocuklarımız üçer sene Ankarada kaldılar. | Our children spent three years each in Ankara. |
| 9. Ayın kaçında gelecek? | What day of the month will he come? |
| 10. Ne diye bize gelmiyorsunuz? | Why is it that you (never) come to see us? |
-

1. Progressive verb forms

The progressive verb forms denote action still going on and not yet completed.

The suffixes of the present progressive verb forms are

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st	-(V ⁴) y o r u m	-(V ⁴) y o r u z
2nd	-(V ⁴) y o r s u n	-(V ⁴) y o r s u n u z
3rd	-(V ⁴) y o r	-(V ⁴) y o r l a r

The symbol (V⁴) in these forms denotes a vowel buffer. It is used after any positive verb stem which ends in a consonant. After a verb stem which ends in a vowel—this, of course, includes all negative verb stems—the (V⁴) buffer is omitted.

The final vowel of any verb stem (positive or negative) which ends in *e* or *a* is altered by the immediately following initial *y* of the progressive suffixes. The verb stem's final *e* becomes *i*; its final *a* becomes *ı*. Hence the verb *demek* (*der*) forms *diyorum* 'I am saying,' etc.

The syllable *yor* is invariable and hence violates vowel harmony.

The past progressive verb forms use these suffixes

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st	-(V ⁴) y o r d u m	-(V ⁴) y o r d u k
2nd	-(V ⁴) y o r d u n	-(V ⁴) y o r d u n u z
3rd	-(V ⁴) y o r d u	-(V ⁴) y o r l a r d ı

Strictly, the present progressive verb forms *gidiyorum* means

I am (now in the action of) going.

(or) I (have been in the action of going and still) am going.

In ordinary use, however, *gidiyorum* frequently also may have a general sense.

Her gün gidiyorum. I am going daily.

The past progressive conveys the idea of 'used to be X-ing.'

Gidiyorum. I used to go (used to be in the action of going).

NOTE:

*İki seneden beri bu mektepte
çalışıyorum.*

I have been working at this school for two
years (and still am).

*İki seneden beri o mektepte
çalışıyordum.*

I had been working at that school for two
years (but no longer am).

PRESENT PROGRESSIVE VERB FORMS

	POSITIVE	INTERROGATIVE
singular		
1st	<i>gidiyorum</i>	<i>gidiyor muyum?</i>
2nd	<i>gidiyorsun</i>	<i>gidiyor musun?</i>
3rd	<i>gidiyor</i>	<i>gidiyor mu?</i>

plural		
1st	gidiyoruz	gidiyor muyuz?
2nd	gidiyorsunuz	gidiyor musunuz?
3rd	gidiyorlar	gidiyorlar mı?
	NEGATIVE	NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE
singular		
1st	gitmiyorum	gitmiyor muyum?
2nd	gitmiyorsunuz	gitmiyor musun?
3rd	gitmiyor	gitmiyor mu?
plural		
1st	gitmiyoruz	gitmiyor muyuz?
2nd	gitmiyorsunuz	gitmiyor musunuz?
3rd	gitmiyorlar	gitmiyorlar mı?

2. Common infinitive plus the locative with 'to be'

Another present tense, much used in newspapers and narration, is the common infinitive plus the locative plus the present tense of 'to be.'

SINGULAR		PLURAL
1st	Gitmekteyim. I am (in the act of) going.	Gitmekteyiz.
2nd	Gitmekteisin.	Gitmekteisiniz.
3rd	Gitmektedir.	Gitmektedirler.

The past tense of this form is

SINGULAR		PLURAL
1st	Gitmekteydim.	Gitmekteydik.
2nd	Gitmekteydin.	Gitmekteydiniz.
3rd	Gitmekteydi.	Gitmekteydiler.

Note also this pattern.

<i>gitmek üzere olmak</i>	to be on the point of going
<i>Gitmek üzereyim.</i>	I'm just going, just about to go.
<i>Gitmek üzereydim.</i>	I was just about to go.

3. Ordinals and distributives

The ordinals ('1st,' '2nd,' '3rd,' etc.) are formed with the suffix $-(V^4) n c V^4$.

The distributives ('one by one,' 'by twos,' 'in threes,' etc.) are formed with the suffix $-(\S) V^2 r$.

CARDINAL	ORDINAL	DISTRIBUTIVE
bir	birinci (1inci)	birer
iki	ikinci (2nci)	ikişer
üç	üçüncü (3üncü)	üçer
dört (dördü)	dördüncü	dörder
beş	beşinci	beşer
altı	altıncı	altışar
yedi	yedinci	yedişer
sekiz	sekizinci	sekizer
dokuz	dokuzuncu	dokuzar
on	onuncu	onar
on bir	on birinci	on birer
yirmi	yirminci	yirmişer
otuz	otuzuncu	otuzar
kırk	kırkıncı	kırkar
elli	ellinci	ellişer
altmış	altmışıncı	altmışar
yetmiş	yetmişinci	yetmişer
seksen	sekseninci	seksener
doksan	doksanıncı	doksanar
yüz	yüzüncü	yüzer
bin	bininci	biner
on bin	on bininci	on biner

The distributives are frequently said twice.

Birer birer geldiler. They came one by one.

Note also:

<i>ilk</i>	(the) first
<i>son</i>	(the) last
<i>kaçıncı?</i>	(the) how-manyeth?

4. Gerundive in -(y) V²

The suffix -(y) V² added to a verb stem makes a form comparable to the English verbal adjective in -ing.

<i>koşmak</i>	to run	<i>koşa</i>	running (adjective)
<i>gülmek</i>	to laugh	<i>güle</i>	laughing
<i>Koşa koşa geldi.</i>			He came on the run (running, running).
<i>Güle güle gitti.</i>			He went laughingly.

One says to a person who has a new garment

Güle güle giyiniz!

Wear it in happiness!

To a person who has a new abode

Güle güle oturunuz!

Live (dwell) there in happiness!

In Turkish, saying good-bye follows this pattern.

a. *Allaha ısmarladık* (usually contracted to *Alasmaladık*).

'Well, I have decided to depart, good-bye.' (lit. 'We have commended [you] to God.' This is said by the person who is leaving.)

b. *Güle güle (gidiniz)!*

'Good-bye.' (lit. '[Go] laughing, laughing,' response of the person of whom leave is being taken.)

NOTE: From *demek* 'to say' (used with direct quotations) comes the gerundive *diye* 'saying.'

Kız 'Baban nerede' diye bana sordu.

The girl asked me, 'Where is your father?'

Diye may represent a pair of 'spoken' quotation marks.

Arkadaşlar diye söze başladı.

He began (his) speech with (the word) 'friends.'

Gitmek istemiyorum diye bağırды.

He shouted, 'I don't want to go!'

Diye may also mean 'on the pretext that,' 'on the supposition that.'

Balık tutarım diye göle gitti.

He went to the lake, hoping (on the supposition) that he would catch some fish.

Ne diye is a frequent expression for 'why?'

Ne diye gelmediniz?

Why didn't you come?

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Biz sinemaya gidiyoruz, Hasan Bey. Siz de gelmiyor musunuz?
2. Hangi sinemaya gidiyorsunuz?
3. Kristal Sinemasına gidiyoruz. Çok iyi bir film oynuyor. Geliniz. Çok beğeneceksiniz.
4. Doğrusu, Mehmet Bey, ben sinemayı pek sevmiyorum. Aynı zamanda çok işim var.

5. Yazık, Hasan Bey, o halde siz işinizi görünüz. Biz gideceğiz. Allaha ısmarladık.
6. Güle güle, efendim. İnşallah filim çok iyidir. Belki önümüzdeki hafta ben de o filmi göreceğim.
7. Hasan Bey sinemaya gitmek üzereydi, fakat işi çok olduğundan vazgeçti, gitmedi.
8. Babası Pariste olan kızın ismini biliyor musunuz?
9. Biliyorum. İsmi Selmadır.
10. Babası Pariste kaldığı zaman, Selma nerede oturacak?
11. Şimdiki halde yanımızda oturuyor. Gelecek ay, babası Fransadan döndükten sonra, onunla beraber kendi evlerinde oturacak.
12. Çocuklar mektepten ikişer ikişer çıktılar.
13. Biz hep yirmişer lira verdik.
14. Mihri, Mehmedin yarın geleceğini söylüyor.
15. Siz hakikaten geleceğine inanıyor musunuz?

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. This evening my father is working at home. Therefore I hope that he will give me the key to the car.
2. What are you doing?
3. I am writing a letter to my sister.
4. Are you writing to your sister in Ankara or to the one in İzmir?
5. To the one in İzmir.
6. I was on the point of going to Bursa, but my father didn't give me the money.
7. Believing that Ahmet had taken his book, Mehmet phoned Ahmet's father.
8. Sait writes to the effect that Ahmet will come tomorrow.
9. I'm going home. Good-bye, Mehmet.
10. Good-bye, Ahmet.

Lesson 19

'To Be Able'

-
- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Söylediklerimi anlıyabildiniz, değil mi? | You were able to understand what (the things that) I said, weren't you? |
| 2. Benimle gelebilir misin? | Can you come with me? |
| 3. Gelemem. | I can't (come). |
| 4. Olacak mı? | Will it happen (work, turn out well)? |
| 5. Olabilir. Olabilir. | It may. It may (happen, etc.). |
| 6. Olamaz! | Impossible!(It cannot happen, etc.) |
| 7. Ben gidemez miyim? | Can't I go? (Do you mean to say that I can't go?) |
| 8. Okuyabildiğim kitaplar çoktur, okuyamadığım kitaplar azdır. | The books I've been able to read are numerous; those that I haven't been able to read are few. |
| 9. Ahmet gelemeyeceğini söyleyecek, fakat gelebilecek. | Ahmet will say that he won't be able to come, but he'll be able to. |
| 10. İstediklerinizi bulamadılar. | They couldn't find (the things) what you wanted. |
-

'To be able'

The gerundive in -(y) V²—and not the verb stem—is the base on which various compound verb forms are built. Of these the most important are the forms composed of the gerundive in -(y) V² plus *bilmek*, the device by which

Turkish expresses the idea of 'to be able' ('to know how to'). In the negative, tense and person suffixes are added directly to the negative gerund. Forms of *bilmek* are not required.

common infinitive

POSITIVE		NEGATIVE	
<i>gidebilmek</i>	to be able to go, being able to go	<i>gidememek</i>	not to be able to go, not being able to go

past definite

singular

1st	<i>gidebildim</i>	<i>gidemedim</i>
2nd	<i>gidebildin</i>	<i>gidemedin</i>
3rd	<i>gidebildi</i>	<i>gidemedi</i>

plural

1st	<i>gidebildik</i>	<i>gidemedik</i>
2nd	<i>gidebildiniz</i>	<i>gidemediniz</i>
3rd	<i>gidebildiler</i>	<i>gidemediler</i>

past definite interrogative

singular

1st	<i>gidebildim mi?</i> etc.	<i>gidemedim mi?</i> etc.
-----	-------------------------------	------------------------------

general forms

singular

1st	<i>gidebilirim</i>	<i>gidemem</i>
2nd	<i>gidebilirsin</i> etc.	<i>gidemezsin</i> etc.

general interrogative

singular

1st	<i>gidebilir miyim?</i>	<i>gidemez miyim?</i>
2nd	<i>gidebilir misin?</i> etc.	<i>gidemez misin?</i> etc.

future

singular

1st	<i>gidebileceğim</i>	<i>gidemiyeceğim</i>
2nd	<i>gidebileceksin</i> etc.	<i>gidemiyeceksin</i> etc.

future interrogative

singular

1st gidebilecek miyim?

2nd gidebilecek misin?

etc.

gidemiyecek miyim?

gidemiyecek misin?

etc.

past indefinite

singular

1st gidebilmişim

2nd gidebilmişsin

etc.

gidememişim

gidememişsin

etc.

past indefinite interrogative

singular

1st gidebilmiş miyim?

2nd gidebilmiş misin?

etc.

gidememiş miyim?

gidememiş misin?

etc.

present progressive

singular

1st gidebiliyorum

2nd gidebiliyorsunuz

etc.

gidemiyorum

gidemiyorsun

etc.

present progressive interrogative

singular

1st gidebiliyor muyum?

2nd gidebiliyor musun?

etc.

gidemiyor muyum?

gidemiyor musun?

etc.

past progressive

singular

1st gidebiliyordum

2nd gidebiliyordun

etc.

gidemiyordum

gidemiyordun

etc.

past progressive interrogative

singular

1st gidebiliyor muydum?

2nd gidebiliyor muydun?

etc.

gidemiyor muydum?

gidemiyor muydun?

etc.

3rd person imperatives

singular	gidebilsin!	gidemesin!
plural	gidebilesinler!	gidemesinler!

gerund in -t/d V⁴ k

gidebildik *gidemedik*

NOTE: The final *e* of a verb stem, positive or negative (e.g., *iste* and *isteme*) becomes *i* before the immediately suffixed *y*. The final *a* of a verb stem, positive or negative (e.g., *anla*, *anlama*) becomes *ı*.

istiyebilmek *istiyememek*
anlıyabilmek *anlıyamamak*

The negative general and future participles of the 'to be able' verb forms express the English 'too *x* to.'

kutuya giremeyecek kadar büyük too big to go into the box

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Otomobil daha çabuk gitmez mi?

Daha çabuk gidemez.

2. Pasaportunuzu aldıktan sonra oraya gidebilirsiniz.

3. Caddedeki otomobilin kimin olduğunu bilmiyor musunuz?

4. Yarın gelebileceğinizi ümit ediyoruz.

5. (tramvayda)

Ön tarafa geçiniz, baylar. Orada boş yer çoktur. Burada inmek isteyen var mı? Galatasarayda incek var mı?

6. (telefonda)

Alo, Alo! Orası neresi, efendim?

Burası İhsan Şirketi, efendim.

Ahmet Bey orada mı?

Hangi Ahmet Beyi istiyorsunuz, efendim?

Bay Ahmet Mehmetoğlu.

Hayır, efendim. Burada yokmuş. Her halde çıkmış. Bundan yarım saat evvel buradaydı.

Siz kimsiniz, efendim?

Ben Erdoğan Yılmaz.

Erdoğan Bey! Siz misiniz?

Benim, efendim. Ya siz?

Ben Ankaralı Sait. Bugün geldim.

Maşallah, Sait Bey. Hoş geldiniz!

Hoş bulduk, Erdoğancığım. Nasılsın? İyi misin? İnşallah iyisin.
Teşekkür ederim, Sait, çok iyiyim. Ya sen, sen nasılsın?
Ben de iyiyim teşekkür ederim. Ne var ne yok, Erdoğancığım?

* * *

Eyvallah, Erdoğan Bey. Bir randevum var. Allaha ismarladık. Ahmet Beye
yarın tekrar telefon edeceğimi lütfen söyler misin?
Hay hay! Sait Bey. Söylerim. Güle güle, efendim!

7. Yaşlı kadın ağıyla ağıyla oturdu.
8. Çocuklarımın arkadaşlarından en küçüğü budur.
9. Onlara göre siz oraya iki defa gitmişsiniz.
10. Türkiyede göreceğiniz şehirlerden en büyüğü İstanbuldur.
11. Ahmet, iki güzel halı satın aldığını yazdı.
12. Evinizin arkasında iki büyük ağaç mevcut olduğu doğru mudur?
13. Ahmet! Al bu parayı! Koşa koşa tütüncüye git, çabuk iki gazete al!
14. Gazeteleri alanın ismini biliyor musunuz?
15. Bu dünyada bundan daha güzel bir dağın mevcut olduğuna inanmıyorum.
16. Bu adam ne iş görüyor? Gazeteci midir? Öğretmen midir?
17. Süheylânın kızkardeşinin bizde iki üç gece kalacağını ümit ediyoruz.
18. Ne diye gelmedin, Ahmet?
19. Her sabah saat 9:30da buraya gelebileceksiniz, değil mi?
20. Her sabah buraya gelebileceğinize inanmam.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Ahmet said, 'I can't find my book.'
2. Ahmet said that he couldn't find his own book.
3. I hope that you can write me every week.
4. Why weren't you able to enter the building?
5. Will you be able to go to Ankara tomorrow?
6. May I come in?
7. I know you will be able to read this well.
8. Do you know why they weren't able to come?
9. It is evident that Ahmet won't be able to find the car key.
10. I can say that this is the best book I have ever read.

Lesson 20

Auxiliary Verb. Optative-Subjunctive.

Necessity. Condition

1. **Süheylâ kimden bahsediyordu?**
Whom was Süheylâ talking about?
2. **Ne yapıyorsunuz? Yazı yazıyorsunuz, değil mi?**
What are you doing? You're writing, aren't you?
3. **Geçen sene çok kar yağdı.**
It snowed a lot last year.
4. **Ne dersiniz? Yağmur yağacak mı, yağmıyacak mı?**
What do you say? Is it going to rain, or not?
5. **Gideyim mi?**
Should I go? (Ought I to go? *Shall* I go?)
6. **Gidelim mi, gitmiyelim mi?**
Shall we go, or not? (Should we go, or not?)
7. **Gitmeli değil miydik?**
Didn't we have to go?
8. **Gitmemeliyim.**
I must not go.
9. **Gitmek mecburiyetindeydim.**
I had to (was obliged to) go.
10. **İstanbulda ise hava çok güzeldi.**
In Istanbul, however, the weather was very fine.
11. **Oğlum, çalışmaktansa futbol oynamayı tercih etti.**
My son preferred to play football, instead of working.
12. **Kimse bilmez.**
Nobody knows.

13. Ne kadar para istersen iste! Ben sana beş kuruş vermem.

Ask for as much money as you want! I won't give you five *kuruş*.

1. Auxiliary verb

Etmek (*eder*) is the usual auxiliary. An older auxiliary is *eylemek*. Both mean 'to do' and both are seldom used except as auxiliaries. The usual word for 'to do' is *yapmak* ('make,' 'do,' 'manufacture').

The auxiliary is used with numerous nouns, especially with Arabic infinitives.

<i>teşekkür etmek</i>	to thank (to do the action <i>teşekkür</i> 'to render thanks')
<i>bahsetmek</i>	to discuss, talk about (with ablative), to mention

The old verb *kılmak* ('make,' 'do') today seldom appears except in the expression

namaz kılmak to perform the formal Moslem prayer ritual.

Yapmak sometimes is used as an auxiliary, especially when the auxiliary is in the relative gerundive form.

Ahmedin yaramazlık yaptığı gün

Some originally Arabic words, with the aid of no auxiliaries at all, retain their grammatical force, i.e., require suffixes on preceding words.

denize nazır bir oda a room looking onto (with dative) the sea

Turkish frequently uses the cognate object.

<i>yazı yazmak</i>	to write (writing)
<i>yemek yemek</i>	to eat (food)

Sometimes a cognate subject is used.

Yağmur yağıyor. It's raining. (Rain is raining.)

2. Optative-subjunctive

The ideas of 'may' and 'might' can be expressed by the optative-subjunctive verb forms. Their suffixes, added to the gerundive (and not to the verb stem), are

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st person	-y i/1 m	-1 i/1 m
2nd person	-s i/1 n	-s i/1 n i/1 z
3rd person	-V ²	-1 V ² r

PRESENT OPTATIVE-SUBJUNCTIVE VERB FORMS

	POSITIVE		NEGATIVE
singular			
1st person	gideyim	that I may, might go	gitmeyeyim
2nd person	gidesin		gitmeyesin
3rd person	gide		gitmeye
plural			
1st person	gidelim		gitmeyelim
2nd person	gidesiniz		gitmeyesiniz
3rd person	gideler		gitmeyeler

INTERROGATIVE

	POSITIVE	NEGATIVE
singular		
1st person	gideyim mi?	gitmeyeyim mi?
plural		
1st person	gidelim mi?	gitmeyelim mi?

Rather than the third person present optative-subjunctive forms, Turkish favors the use of the third person imperatives. (See Lesson 7, section 4.)

PAST

The optative-subjunctive past forms are seldom used. For the expression of hopeless wishes use of the conditional is more common.

singular			
	POSITIVE		NEGATIVE
1st person	geleydim	I should have gone	gelmeyeydim
2nd person	geleydin		gelmeyeydin
3rd person	geleydi		gelmeyeydi
plural			
1st person	geleydik		gelmeyeydik
2nd person	geleydiniz		gelmeyeydiniz
3rd person	geleydiler		gelmeyeydiler

INTERROGATIVE

singular		
1st person	geleydim mi?	gelmeyeydim mi?
2nd person	geleydin mi?	gelmeyeydin mi?
	etc.	etc.

3. Necessity

English 'have to,' 'must,' 'obliged to,' etc., are most frequently expressed by the suffix

-m V² l i/1

added directly to the verb stem (positive or negative) and followed by the required form of the verb 'to be.'

PRESENT

	POSITIVE		NEGATIVE
singular			
1st person	Gitmeliyim	I have to go.	Gitmemeliyim
2nd person	Gitmelisin		Gitmemelisin
3rd person	Gitmeli(dir)		Gitmemeli(dir)
plural			
1st person	Gitmeliyiz		Gitmemeliyiz
2nd person	Gitmelisiniz		Gitmemelisiniz
3rd person	Gitmeli(dir)ler		Gitmemeli(dir)ler

PRESENT INTERROGATIVE

	POSITIVE	NEGATIVE
singular		
1st person	Gitmeli miyim?	Gitmemeli miyim?
2nd person	Gitmeli misin?	Gitmemeli misin?
3rd person	Gitmeli mi(dir)?	Gitmemeli mi(dir)?
plural		
1st person	Gitmeli miyiz?	Gitmemeli miyiz?
2nd person	Gitmeli misiniz?	Gitmemeli misiniz?
3rd person	Gitmeliler mi?	Gitmemeliler mi?

The third singular forms may be used impersonally.

<i>Oraya gitmeli.</i>	It's necessary to go there. One should (has to) go there.
<i>Oraya gitmemeli.</i>	It's necessary not to go there. One should not go there.

Compare with this usage the following patterns.

<i>Oraya gitmek lâzım(dir).</i>	It is necessary to go there.
<i>Oraya gitmek gerek(tir).</i>	It is right (proper, necessary) to go there.

The noun *mecburiyet* 'obligation,' 'necessity' furnishes another frequently used means of expressing necessity.

Gitmek mecburiyetindeyim.

I must go. (I am in the necessity of going.)

Gitmek mecburiyetinde miydiler?

Did they have to go? (Were they in the necessity of going?)

4. Condition

The sign of the conditional has two forms.

a. -s V² (suffix)

b. *ise* (independent word)

The conditional sign may follow a substantive.

o ise,

he, however; as for him; if he (i.e., if you mean him . . .)

kitabta ise

in the book, however; if in the book (i.e., if you mean in the book . . .)

ne ise, neyse

nevertheless; even so; be that as it may

her neden ise, her nedense

for whatever reason

(her) nasılsa

some way or other

yoksa

or else

kimse

nobody, no one (used with other negatives), someone

Evde kimse yok.

There's nobody home.

Kimseyi bulamadım.

I couldn't find anybody.

Note particularly this pattern

gitmektense

rather than going

Ben, sinemaya gitmektense

Instead of going to the movies,

evde kalmayı tercih ettim.

I preferred to stay home.

The suffixes of the present conditional verb forms, added directly to the verb stem, positive or negative, are

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
1st person	-s V ² m	-s V ² k
2nd person	-s V ² n	-s V ² n i/1 z
3rd person	-s V ²	-s V ² l V ² r

PRESENT CONDITIONAL

	POSITIVE	NEGATIVE
singular		
1st person	gitsem	gitmesem
2nd person	gitsen	gitmesen
3rd person	gitse	gitmese
plural		
1st person	gitsek	gitmesek
2nd person	gitseniz	gitmeseniz
3rd person	gitseler	gitmeseler

Used alone—in an unfinished condition or in a question—these forms may mean ‘Wouldn’t it be a good idea if . . .?’

<i>Haydi, ne dersin?</i>	Well, what do you say? Wouldn’t it be nice
<i>Kalksak, denize girsek?</i>	if we got up and went into the water?
<i>O gitmese mi?</i>	Is there any reason why he shouldn’t go?

GENERAL CONDITIONAL

The general conditional verb forms are frequently used in expressing such indefinites as English ‘whoever,’ ‘whatever,’ ‘wherever,’ and ‘whenever.’

<i>Kim isterse gitsin.</i>	Whoever wants to go, may.
<i>O ne söylerse söylesin, doğru değildir.</i>	No matter what he says (whatever he may say, let him say [it]), it’s not so.
<i>O kız nereye giderse gitsin, ben Ankaraya gitmem.</i>	No matter where that girl goes, I’m not going to Ankara.
<i>(Her) ne zaman giderse gitsin, ben geleceğim.</i>	No matter when he goes, I’ll come.

The interrogative may also express a condition.

<i>Beni gördü mü kaçır.</i>	When he sees me, he runs off.
	If he sees me, he flees.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Niçin yemeğinizi yemediniz?
2. Siz ne dersiniz efendim, oraya bugün gideyim mi, gitmeyeyim mi?
3. Kim gelirse gelsin, ben bu kitabı yalnız Ahmet Beye vereceğim.
4. Siz hakikaten bir saat sonra gitmeli misiniz?

5. Elinizdeki saate şöyle bir bakarsanız, saatin 9:30 olduğunu göreceksiniz.
6. Yarın hiç kimsenin buraya gelemeyeceğinden korkarım.
7. Onlar derhal buraya gelmek mecburiyetinde değildiler.
8. Niçin telefon edemediğini biliyor musunuz?
9. Şehrimizde kar yağmaz.
10. Erdoğan'ın karısı, kendi annesinin iki ay kadar çok hasta olduğunu, fakat ondan sonra tekrar Ankara'ya gittiğini söyledi.
11. Siz ne söylerseniz söyleyiniz, onların gitmeye hazır olduklarını kendi gözlerimle gördüm.
12. Büyük kutunuzdan aldığı saati size tekrar vermezse hakikati annesine söylemek mecburiyetinde kalacaksınız, değil mi?
13. Nasıl isterse öyle yapsın!
14. Haydi, çocuklar! Vakit geçiyor. Haydi gidelim.
15. Efendim, müsaadenizle ekmeğinizden ufak bir parça alayım mı?
16. Oğlum, okula gitmektense sinemaya gitmeyi tercih etti.
17. Ahmedin dün bize tarif ettiği kitapçı dükkânının nerede olduğunu bilmiyorsunuz, değil mi?
18. Gitmediğini söylemediler, değil mi?
19. Gitmiyeceğini söyleyemediler, değil mi?
20. Gelemeyeceğinden haberiniz yok mu?

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. May I give you a cup of tea, sir?
2. If I don't go, won't you go either?
3. What shall we talk about?
4. Did you really have to go?
5. Do you really have to go?
6. What do you say? Ought we to go, or not?
7. If he comes, we'll give him the book.
8. They, however, could not go.
9. Say, 'Thank you, sir!'
10. He didn't have to give us the money.

Lesson 21

Passive Verbs. The Agent.

Causative, Reflexive, and Mutual Verbs

1. **Bu kitap kimin tarafından yazıldı?**
By whom was this book written?
 2. **Gitmemize müsaade edilecek mi?**
Will permission be given for us to go (for our going)?
 3. **Anlatabildim mi?**
Have I succeeded in making myself clear (in explaining myself)?
 4. **Bunun sebebi bilinmez.**
The reason for this is not known.
 5. **Onlar hiç görüşmezler.**
They never talk to each other.
 6. **Bu yemeğe alıştım.**
I grew accustomed to this food.
 7. **Bize onu sormadılar.**
They didn't ask us that.
 8. **Çocuk yıkandı.**
The child washed himself.
 9. **Çocuğu yıkadık.**
We bathed the child.
 10. **Bana hiç bir şey öğretemedi.**
He was unable to teach me a thing.
-

1. Passive verbs

The formation of the passive depends upon the final sound of the verb stem.

- a. Most verbs whose stems end in a vowel form the passive by adding *n*.

<i>söylemek</i>	to say	<i>söylenmek</i>	to be said
<i>okumak</i>	to read	<i>okunmak</i>	to be read

- b. Most verbs whose stems end in a consonant other than *-l* form the passive by adding *-V⁴ l*.

<i>kırmak</i>	to break (transitive)	<i>kırılmak</i>	to be broken
<i>vermek</i>	to give	<i>verilmek</i>	to be given

- c. Verbs whose stems end in *-l* form the passive by adding *-V⁴ n*.

<i>bilmek</i>	to know	<i>bilinmek</i>	to be known
<i>bulmak</i>	to find	<i>bulunmak</i>	to be found

NOTE: *bulunmak*, 'to be found' (and 'to find one's self,' cf. French *se trouver*) is frequently used to mean 'to be' or 'to exist.'

The negative forms of the passive present no difficulties.

<i>söylememek</i>	<i>söylenmemek</i>
<i>okumamak</i>	<i>okunmamak</i>
<i>kırmamak</i>	<i>kırılmamak</i>
<i>vermemek</i>	<i>verilmemek</i>
<i>bilmemek</i>	<i>bilinmemek</i>
<i>bulmamak</i>	<i>bulunmamak</i>

The passive is very frequent in Turkish. It has two principal functions.

- a. that of the English passive

<i>Saatim nerede bulundu?</i>	Where was my watch found?
<i>Saatim kırıldı.</i>	My watch was broken (was smashed).

- b. that of the English active intransitive of such verbs as 'to break.'

Note that English 'to break' has two meanings: a transitive meaning which requires an object—'I broke my watch,' and an intransitive meaning which requires no object—'My watch broke.'

Turkish *kırmak* 'to break' (transitive) expresses only the first of these meanings ('I broke my watch.') To express the second ('My watch broke.),' Turkish uses the passive. Hence the Turkish passive may have two connotations.

<i>Saatim kırıldı.</i>	My watch was broken.	(passive)
<i>Saatim kırıldı.</i>	My watch broke.	(active intransitive)

Many intransitive (active voice) Turkish verbs may take a passive form, thereby expressing the English impersonal.

olmak, olunmak

Rica olunur (or Rica edilir).

It is requested.

gitmek, gidilmek

İstanbul'a nasıl gidilir?

How does one go to Istanbul?

Confusion seldom arises between

Saatim kırıldı.

My watch was smashed.

and

Saatim kırıldı.

My watch broke.

2. The agent

Ambiguity may always be avoided by expressing the agent with the passive. The agent is shown by the noun *taraf* in a possessive construction plus the ablative.

(benim) tarafımdan

by me

(sizin) tarafınızdan

by you

(senin) tarafından

by you

onların tarafından

by them

onun tarafından

by him

otomobil tarafından

by the

(her, it)

auto-

(bizim) tarafımızdan

by us

mobile

Another means of expressing the agent is the suffix -ç/c V².

hükümetçe

by (the) government

3. Causative verbs

Most verbs form the causative by adding -t/d V⁴ r.

from *bilmek, bildirmek*

to inform, assert, announce, communicate;
to cause (someone) to know (something),
etc.

Bunu ona bildirdiler.

They caused this to be known to him.

They informed him of this.

Bu ona bildirildi.

This was made known to him.

Verbs whose stems end in a vowel add only a -t.

from *anlamak, anlatmak*

to explain, recount, etc.

Mektubu bana anlattı.

He explained the letter to me.

Mektup bana anlatıldı.

The letter was explained to me.

Verbs whose stems end in *ç* or *ş* add -V⁴ r.

from <i>içmek, içirmek</i>	to cause (someone) to drink (something)
<i>Süti çocuğa içirdiler.</i>	They made the child drink the milk (got the child to drink it, gave it to the child to drink).
<i>Çocuklara süt içirilir.</i>	Children are made to drink milk (are given milk to drink).

Polysyllabic verb stems ending in *r* or *l* add only a -t.

from <i>oturmak, oturtmak</i>	to cause someone to sit down or dwell in (with objective definite)
<i>Beni Ankarada oturttular.</i>	They made me live in Ankara (settled me there, got me quarters there, stationed me there, etc.).
<i>Ankarada oturtuldum.</i>	I was made to live in Ankara.

The negative forms of the causative present no difficulties.

<i>bildirmek</i>	<i>bildirmemek</i>
<i>bildirilmek</i>	<i>bildirilmemek</i>
<i>anlatmak</i>	<i>anlatmamak</i>
<i>anlatılmak</i>	<i>anlatılmamak</i>
<i>içirmek</i>	<i>içirmemek</i>
<i>içirilmek</i>	<i>içirilmemek</i>
<i>oturtmak</i>	<i>oturtmamak</i>
<i>oturtulmak</i>	<i>oturtulmamak</i>

4. Reflexive verbs

Reflexive verb forms usually add the suffix -(V⁴) n.

<i>giymek</i>	to wear (clothes: transitive)
<i>giyinmek</i>	to dress oneself
<i>giyindirmek</i>	to clothe (someone else)
<i>giyindirilmek</i>	to be clothed (by someone else)

5. Mutual verbs

The mutual or reciprocal verb forms add the suffix -(V⁴) ş. The basic connotation is mutuality of action.

<i>çarpmak</i>	to hit, strike against (with dative)
<i>çarpışmak</i>	to collide, (for two or more) to hit each other
<i>çarpıştırmak</i>	to cause to collide with each other

<i>çarpıştırılmak</i>	to be caused to collide
<i>görmek</i>	to see
<i>görüşmek</i>	to converse, talk together
<i>görüşülmek</i>	to be conversed about
<i>görüştürmek</i>	to make to converse with each other
<i>görüştürülmek</i>	to be made to converse with each other
<i>bulmak</i>	to find
<i>buluşmak</i>	(for two or more) to meet together
<i>buluşturulmak</i>	to be caused to meet or get together

NOTE: A verb may be reciprocal in form although its meaning today retains little if any trace of the idea of mutuality.

<i>kaçmak</i>	to flee
<i>kaçışmak</i>	(for all) to flee, run off in different directions
<i>gelmek</i>	to come
<i>gelişmek</i>	to flourish, to develop (intransitive)
<i>almak</i>	to take
<i>alışmak</i>	to accustom, familiarize oneself with (with dative), become accustomed to (with dative)

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Çay fincanı kırılmış mıydı?
2. Bana göre o hakikaten bilinmez bir şeydir.
3. O adam tarafından yazılan kitaplar bu günlerde güçlük ile bulunuyor.
4. Dün Ahmet Beyoğlunda bulundu.
5. Fincan tarafınızdan mı kırıldı?
6. Haber hükümetçe resmen bildirilmiş.
7. Beni bir iskemleye oturtular ve gitmeme müsaade etmediler.
8. Ben gitmeliyim, efendim. Zaten geç kaldım. Şimdilik, Allaha ısmarladık. Güle güle, Mehmet Bey. Yine görüşürüz, inşallah.
9. Büyük kutu kapıdan geçmedi. Onun için pencereden indirildi.
10. O adamın evimize hiç gelmediği söylenemez. Üç beş defa geldi.
11. Ahmet hakkında iki saat konuştuk. Ondan sonra karar verdik. Her şey anlaşıldı.
12. Onlar ne söylerlerse söylesinler, biz oraya gitmene müsaade etmeyiz.

13. Size yardım edeyim, efendim!
14. İki tane üçüncü mevki bilet istiyorum, lütfen.
15. Kendi söylediklerinizi unuttunuz mu?
16. Bu ev kimin tarafından yapıldı?
17. Parayı nereye koyduklarını sormadınız mı?
18. Bana onu sormayın!
19. Denizde yıkandılar.
20. İzmir'e Cuma günü gitmek mecburiyetinde kalırsam ne yapacağımı bilmiyorum.
21. Bu yeni fabrikalar geliştirilmektedir.
22. Söylenildiğine göre o İstanbul'dan hiç dönmiyecek.
23. Çalışmazsanız öğrenemiyacaksınız.
24. Size Türkçeyi kim öğretiyor?
25. Eski Türkçedeki 'talebe' kelimesinin yerine bugün 'öğrenci' kelimesi daha çok kullanılıyor.

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. This water is undrinkable (not to be drunk).
2. We'll meet in Adana next week. It's agreed (understood).
3. This tobacco is imported from Turkey.
4. Ahmet had Mehmet import the tobacco.
5. One can't get to İzmir by this road.
6. The road is being caused to be widened.
7. Get dressed quickly, son!
8. This news was communicated by the government.
9. Be careful! That is fragile (breakable)!
10. His handwriting is illegible.

Lesson 22

Abbreviating Verb Forms. Attendant Circumstances.

Verb Form in -(y) V⁴ n c V². Verb Form in -t/d V⁴ k ç V²

1. **Dün evinize gelip annenizi gördüm.**
Yesterday I came to your house and saw your mother.
 2. **Dün evinize gidip annenizi görmedim.**
Yesterday I didn't go and see your mother.
 3. **Dün Ahmede gitmeyip size geldim.**
Yesterday I didn't go Ahmet's, I came to your place.
 4. **Atatürk Bulvarından geçerken sizi gördüm.**
I saw you as I was crossing Atatürk Boulevard.
 5. **O İstanbula gelerek bir ev aradı.**
He came to Istanbul and hunted for a house.
 6. **Babasını görünce çok sevindi.**
He was very happy when he saw his father.
 7. **O, gazete okudukça kızar.**
Whenever he reads (a) paper, he gets angry.
 8. **Çocuk çok büyüdü.**
The child grew a great deal.
 9. **Selma iyileşti.**
Selma improved.
 10. **Ahmet birdenbire ihtiyarladı.**
Ahmet grew old all of a sudden.
-

1. Abbreviating verb forms

Turkish has two time-saving devices to avoid the necessity of repeating lengthy verb endings in such sentences as 'They had come to the house, seen all their friends, and then gone back home.' Note that all the verbs in this sentence are identical in person, number, and tense.

- a. The first of these devices is simply to omit part of the ending of each verb until the final verb is reached. Then the last verb gets the full set of suffixes, and these are understood as serving for all the verbs.

Efendim, sizi tebrik eder, teşekkür eder, saygılarımı sunarım. 'Sir, I congratulate you, thank (you), and tender my regards.' In its full form, the sentence would be: *Efendim, sizi tebrik ederim, teşekkür ederim ve saygılarımı sunarım.* With the abbreviating forms, no coordinate conjunction is used.

This device is not used with the past definite forms.

- b. The second abbreviating device is $-(y) V^4 p$. In such a sentence as 'They came and saw.' the first verb receives only the abbreviating suffix, the second verb receives all necessary suffixes. The first verb is understood to bear all the suffixes of the second.

If both verbs in the sentence have a negative meaning, the first verb does not necessarily require the negative syllable. The negative of the second verb may serve for both. If the first verb is negative and the second positive, the $-(y) V^4 p$ is used with the negative verb stem.

This device should never be used more than once in any sentence. No coordinating conjunction may intervene between the form with the abbreviating suffix and the second verb.

<i>gidip gelmek</i>	to go and come
<i>O gün Ahmet okula gidip</i>	That day, Ahmet went to school
<i>sizi gördü.</i>	and saw you.
<i>O gün Ahmet sizi gelip</i>	That day, Ahmet didn't come and
<i>görmedi.</i>	see you.
<i>O gün Ahmet okula gitmeyip</i>	That day Ahmet didn't go to school
<i>sizi gördü.</i>	but did see you.

The abbreviating verb plus the relative gerundive furnish the Turkish expression for 'whether or not.'

<i>Onun gelip gelmediğini bilmiyorum.</i>	I don't know whether or not he came (has come).
---	--

2. Attendant circumstance

Turkish has two participles to convey the idea of attending circumstance. The action expressed by the participle was (is, will be) simultaneous with that expressed by the following main verb.

- a. The first of these two Turkish circumstantial participles employs the present participle of 'to be.'

iken (independent word)

or *-ken* (enclitic which ignores vowel harmony)

Ben burada iken Mehmet

Ankara gitti.

While I was here, Mehmet

went to Ankara.

Siz burada iken Hasan

bize gelmiyecek.

While you're here, Hasan

won't come to our house.

İken and *-ken* combine with many verb forms, especially with the general participle.

gider iken or giderken

while going

okur iken or okurken

while reading

Cebimde para yokken siz hiç

So long as I have no money in

bir şey istemiyeceksiniz.

my pocket, you won't ask for
a thing.

Ben yapma yapma derken o

While I was (still) saying,

ağlamaya başladı.

"Don't! Don't!" he started
to bawl.

Derken, used alone, means 'While X was still saying . . .' 'Before you could say Jack Robinson.'

Derken, Mehmet geldi.

Whereupon, Mehmet came.

- b. The second of the Turkish circumstantial participles is formed by the suffix *-(y) V² r V² k*.

This form denotes an action or circumstance which accompanies the action expressed by the following main verb. Frequently the two verb forms best translate as coordinates.

Evime gelerek para istedi.

He came to my house and
asked for money.

*Evime gelerek beni bulamayıp
gittiler.*

They came to my house,
couldn't find me, and went
away.

3. Verb form in -(y) V⁴ n c V²

This suffix expresses the ideas of 'upon (his coming),' 'the moment that (he came),' etc.

*Necdet sizi görünce kim bilir
ne diyecek ?*

Who knows what Necdet will say when
he sees you?

*Çocuklar derslerini bitirince
bahçeye gittiler.*

The children went to the garden when
they had finished their lessons.

With the postposition *kadar*, this suffix has the sense of 'until,' 'up to the moment that,' etc.

*Siz gelinceye kadar ben burada
kalacağım.*

I'll stay here until you come.

4. Verb form in -t/d V⁴ k ç V²

This form expresses the ideas of 'when,' 'whenever,' etc.

Onu gördükçe kız ağladı.

Whenever she saw it, the girl wept.

Onu gördükçe ağlar.

Whenever he sees it, he weeps.

5. Derived verbs

The four principal means by which verbs are derived from substantives or modifiers are

a. THE SUFFIX -l V²

<i>ihtiyar</i>	aged
<i>ihtiyarlamak</i>	to grow old
<i>ihtiyarlatmak</i>	to age (transitive)
<i>ihtiyarlatılmak</i>	to be caused to age
<i>kolay</i>	easy
<i>kolaylamak</i>	to facilitate; (of a task) to be almost done (intransitive); to get (a task) almost finished (transitive)
<i>kolaylatmak</i>	to make (a task) easy
<i>kolaylanmak</i>	(of a task) to become easier (or) nearly finished
<i>kolaylandırmak</i>	to make or permit (a task) to become easy of execution (or) nearly finished
<i>kolaylaştırmak</i>	to make (something) become easier; gradually to get (a task) nearly finished
<i>kolaylaştırılmak</i>	(for something) to be made easier and easier; (for a task) to be got to the place where it is almost done

b. THE SUFFIX -I V² n

<i>beyaz</i>	white
<i>beyazlanmak</i>	to grow white
<i>beyazlatmak</i>	to bleach, whiten (transitive)
<i>beyazlatılmak</i>	to be bleached, whitened
<i>ümit</i>	hope
<i>ümitlenmek</i>	to become hopeful
<i>ümitlendirmek</i>	to make (someone or something) hopeful
<i>ümitlendirilmek</i>	to be made hopeful

c. THE SUFFIX -V² I

<i>az</i>	few, little
<i>azalmak</i>	to diminish (intransitive)
<i>azaltmak</i>	to reduce or lessen
<i>azaltılmak</i>	to be diminished
<i>çok</i>	much, many, very
<i>çoğalmak</i>	to increase (intransitive), to grow
<i>çoğaltmak</i>	to increase (transitive), to make grow, to augment
<i>çoğaltılmak</i>	to be increased, be made grow

Compare <i>küçük</i>	small
<i>küçülmek</i>	to grow smaller
<i>küçültmek</i>	to make smaller, belittle
<i>küçültülmek</i>	to be made smaller, belittled

d. THE SUFFIX -I V² ş

<i>bir</i>	one
<i>birleşmek</i>	to come together, meet together, unite (intransitive)
<i>birleştirmek</i>	to bring together, unite (transitive)
<i>birleştirilmek</i>	to be brought together, united
<i>iyi</i>	good, well
<i>iyileşmek</i>	to get better, get well, improve (intransitive)
<i>iyileştirmek</i>	to make better, make well, improve (transitive)
<i>iyileştirilmek</i>	to be made better, well; to be improved

NOTE: Study of the above forms will demonstrate that they are parts of a living, human (and therefore illogical) speech, not of a rigid system. Therefore, the student's goal should be not to attempt to coin new forms 'by rule,' but to learn the forms which the Turks actually use.

Exercises

A. Practice aloud. Translate.

1. Ahmet Beyin yarın bizimle beraber sinemaya gidip gitmeyeceğini bilmiyorsunuz, değil mi?
2. Ben Beyoğlunda iken hırsızın biri evime girerek köpeğimi susturup iki güzel halı ile beş yüz lira aldı.
3. Çocukları susturamadıklarından dolayı öğretmenler onların babalarına birer şikâyet mektubu yazdılar.
4. Maşallah, Erdoğan Bey! Oğlunuz ne kadar büyüdü! Gözlerime inanamıyorum.
5. Arkadaşlarınızdan hangilerinin gelebileceklerini bilmediğimiz için yemeği hangi lokantada yiyeceğimize henüz karar vermedik.
6. Süheylâ Hanımın hastalandığından beri kaç ay geçtiğini iyice hatırlıyamıyorum.
7. Benim o gün gelemeyeceğimi onlar çoktan beri biliyorlardı. O halde onların bunu size niye hatırlatmadıklarını bir türlü anlıyamıyorum.
8. Kız babasını görünce hem koşmaya hem ağlamaya başladı.
9. Eğer İstanbulda iki haftadan fazla kalmak mecburiyetinde kalırsam sizinle Ankarada buluşamam.
10. Annenin senin o hafta Ankarada bulunduğunu bilip bilmediğinden emin olmadığım için, orada çektiğim fotoğrafı ne ona gösterdim, ne de babana.
11. Oraya gitmeyip burada kalmaya karar verirlerse, size gönderilmesine söz verdiğim kitapları benden isteyeceklerinden eminim.
12. Ankarada oturmaktansa İstanbulda oturman daha mı iyi?
13. Bilindiği gibi bayram günlerinde kütüphaneye girilmez.
14. Kapı açılınca çocuklar yerlerine koşup oturdular.
15. Onlar, birleştirilmezlerse istediklerini yapamayacaklar.
16. Doktor her gün kliniğine gider, hastalarını kabul ederdi.
17. Gitmezsen ne olur?
18. Oraya hiç gitmememe rağmen bana haftada bir mektup yazıyor, daima beni beklediklerini söylüyorlar.
19. Hava fena olduğu için yüzmeye gitmedik.
20. Görmenin inanmak olduğunu unuttunuz mu?

B. Write in Turkish. Practice aloud.

1. Opening the door, he got into his car and left.
2. Don't forget that the world has grown smaller.
3. Do you know whether Ahmet had read this book?

4. Working hard, he learned Turkish well.
5. Prices went up increasingly.
6. As he was leaving, he gave me a lira.
7. It will be very good if we go there and give him a little money.
8. They wanted not to go there but to stay here.
9. They decided not to go there but to stay here.
10. He says they have decided not to go there but to stay here.

Lesson 23

Statement on Verb Forms.

True and Untrue Conditions

I. Statement on verb forms

The student who has mastered the material presented in the preceding lessons will now recognize, understand, and begin to be able to use the fundamental patterns of Turkish. The following tabulation of possible verb forms should help him identify the many combinations he will encounter as he uses the language.

These eight basic forms of the Turkish verb are familiar.

3RD PERSON SINGULAR

1. past definite	<i>gitti</i>
2. general	<i>gider</i>
3. future	<i>gidecek</i>
4. past indefinite	<i>gitmiş</i>
5. progressive (present)	<i>gidiyor</i>
6. optative-subjunctive	<i>gide</i>
7. verb of necessity	<i>gitmeli</i>
8. conditional	<i>gitse</i>

Disregarding infinitives, imperatives, and participles, the above eight forms represent the eight principal categories—or eight main lines of inflection—needed for comprehension of the entire Turkish verb system.

To use a figure of speech from the vocabulary of music, we may assert that in the symphony or harmony of Turkish speech, these eight categories are the verb system's eight principal themes. In music any given theme may be played, with strikingly different results, in more than one key. In the same way, we may say that the Turkish language has three keys and that most

of the above eight themes may be put into each of the three keys, again with strikingly different results.

The three keys in Turkish are: the antedating key, the disclaiming key, and the provisional key.

a. ANTEDATING FORMS

The antedating key is formed by adding the past forms (independent or suffixed) of the verb 'to be' (see Lesson 14) to the third person singular theme form.

When any one of the eight themes is put into the antedating key, the time value of that theme's forms is thereby moved backward one notch (is 'antedated').

b. DISCLAIMING FORMS

This key is formed by adding the indefinite forms of the verb 'to be' (independent or suffixed) to the third person singular theme form.

When a theme is put into this key, the speaker (or writer) disclaims any personal knowledge of the accurateness of the assertion he is making.

When the past indefinite theme is put into the disclaiming key, the result is the strongest possible disclaimer of responsibility for the validity of the assertion.

There are no past definite disclaiming forms. One cannot logically disclaim and vouch for accuracy in one verb form.

NOTE: The analogy of musical themes and keys must not be pushed too far. The forms of a Turkish verb theme may stand in more than one key at the same time. Thus, each of the disclaimed theme verb forms may—when desired—also be antedated.

c. PROVISIONAL FORMS

The last of the three keys—the provisional—is formed with the conditional of the verb 'to be.' The conditional theme, naturally, does not occur in this key and neither does the optative-subjunctive theme. Verb forms put into the conditional key express the ideas of proviso or supposition.

Provided I go . . .

Suppose I go . . .

If I go . . ., etc.

2. True conditions

Conditions present two main types, true and untrue. The subject (i.e., the speaker or writer), speaking objectively, voices a simple 'if' without indicating

or hinting whether he regards the proviso which he enunciates as being true or false, likely or unlikely, possible or impossible, etc.

In a true condition the conditional forms of the verb 'to be' (i.e., the provisional key) are added to the base (third person singular) of the appropriate verb of the protasis (the 'if' part of the condition). The apodosis (the 'why then' part of the condition) has its verb form exactly as that verb would be were no proviso stipulated at all.

True conditions can be classified according to the time value of the protasis verb.

Protasis verb is past.

Parayı gördü isen (gördüyse) bana söyle.

Parayı gördü ise (gördüyse) bana söyleyecek.

If he saw the money, he'll tell me.

Parayı görmüş ise (görmüşse) bana söyleyecek.

If he saw (has seen) the money, he'll tell me.

Protasis verb is present.

O geliyor ise (geliyorsa) siz gitmelisiniz.

If he is (now) coming, you must go.

Protasis verb is future.

O Ankarada kalacak ise (kalacaksa) annesi hasta değildir.

If he is going to stay in Ankara, his mother is not sick.

NOTE: Many protasis verbs have a vague time value, present or future. For example,

Parayı istersen, söyle.

If you want the money, say (so).

Parayı bulamazsan söyle.

If you can't find the money, say so.

Adamı görürsen bana söyle.

If you see the man, tell me (so).

Adamı görürsen bana söyleyeceksin, değil mi?

If you see the man, you'll tell me, won't you?

3. Untrue conditions

The subject (i.e., the speaker or writer), speaking subjectively, not only says 'if' but also states or hints whether he regards the proviso he is enunciating as being true or untrue, likely or unlikely, possible or impossible, etc.

In an untrue condition, the protasis verb is conditional theme present (or) antedated.

The apodosis verb is general theme antedated (or) future theme antedated.

PROTASIS VERB

APODOSIS VERB

Paranızı bulsa

onu size verirdi.

Paranızı bulsaydı (bulsa idi)

onu size verecekti.

Each of the sentences means

If he had found your money, he would have given it to you.

(and the speaker indicates his own belief, namely, that X did not find the money).

Key to Exercises

Lesson 2

Exercise B.

1. How many kilos of meat?
2. a half kilo of coffee
3. a little water
4. one and one half kilos of sugar
5. several times
6. several kilos of apples
7. two hundred fifty grams of butter
8. five cups of tea
9. very little lemon
very few lemons
10. twelve oranges
11. three and one half hours
12. thirty streets
13. two and one half liras
14. How many apples?
15. How many *kuruş*? how much?
16. three and one half apples
17. sixty seconds
18. sixty minutes
19. twenty-four hours
20. one day
21. seven days
22. four weeks
23. twelve months
24. three hundred and sixty-five days
25. one hundred years
26. two trees
27. three sons
28. How many kilos of sugar?
29. one half kilo of sugar
30. one hundred times
31. How much money?
How much does it cost?
32. a little bit of money; inexpensive
33. How many lemons?
34. lots of apples (many apples)
35. one head
36. two hands
37. two feet
38. two eyes
39. very little lemon; very few lemons
40. two glasses of water
41. little water (not much water)
42. a little milk
43. very little milk
44. ten thousand kilometers
45. eight newspapers
46. half a glass of water
47. seven and one half hours
48. two slices of bread
49. three spoons of sugar
50. three 'breads' (three loaves of bread)

Exercise C.

1. *yarım kilo çay*
2. *üç kilo şeker*
3. *iki yüz gram et*
4. *bir dilim ekmek*
5. *iki fincan kahve*
6. *sekiz tane elma*
7. *kaç tane ev?*
8. *iki tane minare*

9. *bir cami*
10. *üç yıl*
11. *dört gün*
12. *iki hafta*
13. *altı ay*
14. *çok süt*
15. *biraz su*
16. *iki ekmek (iki tane ekmek)*
17. *iki dilim ekmek*
18. *çok az şeker*
19. *çok ağaç*
20. *üç ırmak*
21. *yetmiş yedi göl*
22. *üç şehir*
23. *altmış dört çocuk*
24. *yüz çocuk*
25. *bir göz*
26. *iki göz*
27. *iki ayak*
28. *otuz iki diş*
29. *bir baş*

30. *beş yüz elli beş gün*
31. *on beş yıl*
32. *on iki kız*
33. *on dokuz kere (on dokuz defa)*
34. *on alnı bahçe*
35. *otuz beş gece*
36. *otuz altı gün*
37. *elli yedi buçuk gram*
38. *yüz lira*
39. *iki buçuk lira (iki lira elli kuruş)*
40. *iki bin kilovat*
41. *çok cami*
42. *Kaç tane cami?*
43. *bir çok cadde*
44. *çok su*
45. *az su*
46. *Kaç bardak su?*
47. *biraz su*
48. *dört defa (dört kere)*
49. *çok meyva*
50. *çok elma*

Lesson 3

Exercise A.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. a lovely (beautiful) mother | 16. a good father |
| 2. That mother is pretty. | 17. (the) two good fathers |
| 3. (The) child is very tall. | 18. The two fathers are well. |
| 4. a very tall child | 19. How many fathers? |
| 5. a young girl (daughter) | 20. How many days? |
| 6. One girl is young. (One daughter is young.) | 21. How many apples? |
| 7. The young girl (daughter) is small. | 22. a nice day |
| 8. This young girl is very little. | 23. Today is fine. (This day is good.) |
| 9. These two women are good. | 24. This is a nice day. |
| 10. twelve good ladies | 25. (the) big car |
| 11. This (one) is very small. | 26. two large cars |
| 12. two old women | 27. (The) two autos are big. |
| 13. (The) two women are aged. | 28. This is a small car. |
| 14. The two old ladies are short. | 29. (The) one car's new; the other's old. |
| 15. Father is good (well). | 30. The big car's new. |
| | 31. The other car's awfully old. |

32. This (one) is very old.
33. This candy's very good. (This sugar is good.)
34. a little sugar
35. That lake is very large.
36. (the) two pretty lakes
37. (The) two lakes are charming.
38. little money (not much money)
39. This (sum of) money is very small.
40. a little money

41. (the) three cups of coffee
42. (the) three coffees
43. (the) three coffees
44. a good many cups (several cups, a number of cups)
45. several cups of tea
46. How much money? (How much?)
47. 35 liras and 15 *kuruş*
48. (the) five old houses
49. (The) five houses are old.
50. This (one) is extremely old.

Exercise B.

1. *büyük bir ayak*
2. *bir büyük ayak*
3. *iki büyük ayak*
4. *Bu ayak büyük.*
5. *Bir ayak büyük, diğer ayak küçük.*
6. *Kaç kadın?*
7. *iki yaşlı kadın*
8. *Bu iki kadın yaşlı.*
9. *İki yaşlı kadın kısa (boyu).*
10. *kısa boylu yaşlı iki kadın*
11. *güzel bir cadde*
12. *iki güzel cadde.*
13. *Bu şehir yeni, diğer şehir eski.*

14. *üç yüksek minare (üç tane yüksek minare)*
15. *bu eski ev*
16. *Bu ev yüksek.*
17. *Eski ev büyük, yeni ev küçük.*
18. *Kaç ev? (Kaç tane ev?)*
19. *Kaç küçük ev? (Kaç tane küçük ev?)*
20. *Kaç ev küçük? (Kaç tane ev küçük?)*
21. *Bu ev çok küçük.*
22. *Çok küçük ev güzel.*
23. *dört genç adam*
24. *Dört adam genç.*
25. *Dört genç adam uzun.*

Lesson 4

Exercise A.

1. Today is pleasant.
2. These days are good.
3. These cups are very small.
4. How many little cups?
5. How many cups are small?
6. Some cups are very big.
7. Those cups are lovely.
8. five cups of good coffee
9. This young child is very big.
10. This youth is very tall.

11. These young children are very small.
12. These youths are very short.
13. This cup's big.
14. This big cup is pretty.
15. These cups are beautiful.
16. These big cups are pretty.
17. The big ones are lovely.
18. These big ones are very good.

19. This house is small.
20. This little house is pretty.
21. These little houses are pretty.
22. The little ones are very nice.

23. The little ones are old (but) the big ones are new.
24. How many houses are small?
25. How many small houses?

Exercise B.

1. *bir at*
2. *bir büyük at*
3. *büyük bir at*
4. *büyük atlar*
5. *büyük atlar*
6. *iki büyük at*
7. *bazı büyük atlar*
8. *Bazı atlar büyük.*
9. *Bu büyük at çok iyi.*
10. *Diğer büyük at çok fena.*
11. *İki büyük at güzel.*
12. *Bu atlar küçük.*
13. *Büyükler çok iyi, küçükler fena.*
14. *iki yaşlı kadın*

15. *iki yaşlı kadın*
16. *bazı yaşlı kadınlar*
17. *bazı yaşlılar*
bazı eski şeyler
18. *Bu kadın yaşlı, diğer kadın genç.*
19. *Eski şeyler küçük.*
Yaşlılar küçük.
20. *Gençler güzel.*
21. *Fahrünnisa genç, Ahmet çok yaşlı.*
22. *Bu iyi.*
23. *Bu iyi.*
24. *Küçük evler eski büyük evler yeni.*
25. *Küçükler eski büyükler yeni.*

Lesson 5

Exercise A.

Note: Each past definite form may, according to the context, normally convey any one of the three English past tenses set forth above (Lesson 5, Section 3). Hence the 'translations' given below by no means convey the whole potential significance of the Turkish verb forms.

1. Who came?
2. When did you come?
3. They've read a lot.
4. You haven't read much. (said to one person)
5. I understood very little.
6. We didn't get (understand) much.
7. The youngsters ran a good deal.
8. The two children came this morning.
9. This coffee's very good.
10. I bought a kilo and a half of coffee.
11. Who laughed?

12. Erdoğan laughed a good deal.
13. How many times have you come? (How many times have you been here?)
14. Istanbul is a large and beautiful city.
15. The Mediterranean is large, (and) the Marmara is small.
16. The house is pretty and the yard (garden) is big.
17. The young people got here today.
18. (The) five youths laughed.
19. This child is very young.
20. The little girl ran.
21. two large eyes

22. The two eyes are large.
23. This eye is big, (and) that eye is small.
24. What's this?
25. This is an apple.
26. How many liters of milk?
27. two and one half cups of milk
28. Who are they?
29. They are Sait and Ali.
30. Who has understood? (Who's got the point?)
31. They understood.
32. These houses are large.
33. These are large.
34. The grownups got here this morning.
35. The youths have come this evening.

36. The fruit has ripened.
37. Ahmet wanted to come.
38. Ahmet, when did you come?
39. I came this morning.
40. The kids read a little.
41. What did they want?
42. How many cars did you see?
43. I saw five automobiles.
44. What has happened?
45. good children
46. When did you come?
47. The young folks ran.
48. What have you found?
49. two good children
50. What did they read?

Exercise B.

1. *büyük bir çocuk*
2. *Çocuk büyük.*
3. *dört küçük kız*
4. *Dört kız küçük.*
5. *beş güzel küçük kız*
6. *Bu beş küçük kız güzel.*
7. *üç büyük fena çocuk*
8. *Bu sabah fena bir çocuk geldi.*
9. *Fena çocuk bu sabah geldi.*
10. *Kim geldi?*
11. *Ahmet ne zaman geldi?*
12. *iki kilo portakal*
13. *iki kilo iyi portakal*

14. *Bu iki kilo portakal çok iyi.*
15. *Elmalar çok iyi, portakallar fena.*
16. *Süheylâ çok okudu.*
17. *Çok az aldık.*
18. *Bu şehir çok büyük.*
19. *Deniz ve dağlar güzel.*
20. *Cadde büyük, cami küçük.*
21. *Ne zaman geldiler?*
22. *Ahmet kaç tane elma istedi?*
23. *Yedi elma istedi.*
24. *Kaç kaşık şeker?*
25. *Kaç dilim ekmek?*

Lesson 6

Exercise A.

1. Who's taken the money? (Who took the money?)
Ahmet took the money.
Ahmet took it.
2. Who took the money?
Ahmet did.
When did he take it?

- He took the money this morning.
He took it this morning.
He took (it) this morning.
3. Mehmet, when did you see Ahmet?
I saw Ahmet today.
I saw (him) today.

4. Children! Whom did you see today?
Today we saw several men.
5. Who has seen these two men?
We have seen them.
6. What did this little girl break?
She broke a cup.
7. Who broke the cups?
The little girl broke the cups.
The little girl broke them.
8. When did the girl break the cups?
She broke them this morning.
9. How many cups did the little girl break?
She broke two cups.
She broke two.
10. What did the dog see?
The dog saw the cat.
The cat ran.
11. What did the cat want?
The cat wanted milk.
What did the cat find?
The cat found the milk.
12. Who took these five glasses?
I took them.
When did you take the glasses?
I took the glasses this evening.
13. These mountains are very lovely.
They saw the lovely mountains.
They saw some lovely mountains.
14. Ahmet, when did you come?
I came this morning.
When did Ahmet come?
He came this morning.
15. Mehmet and Sait came yesterday.
Who came yesterday?
Yesterday they came.
16. Who understood him?
I understood him.
17. You are late, Ahmet!
Yes, I am very late.
18. Istanbul is a large city.
Who has seen Istanbul?
We have seen it.
19. Those youngsters are very small.
When did they go?
The little ones went this morning.
20. Welcome, Ahmet! Come right in!
Thanks, Mehmet! I'm glad to be here.

Exercise B.

1. *Dün kitabı okudum.*
2. *Dün iki kitap okudum.*
3. *Bu kitabı kim okudu?*
4. *Dün gittiniz. (Siz dün gittiniz.)*
5. *Hoş geldiniz, Fahrünnisa!*
6. *Hoş bulduk, Selma.*
7. *Mehmet biraz para istedi.*
8. *Mehmet kaç para istedi?*
9. *Parayı kim istedi?*
10. *İki lirayı buldum.*

Lesson 7

Exercise A.

1. Ahmet's got the car. (Ahmet took the car.)
2. It's Ahmet who's got the car. (Ahmet took the car.)
3. Who saw me? (Who's seen me?)
4. They wanted you. (They asked for you.)
5. I read that book (way over there) but you read this one.
6. We've seen the big mosque.
7. Whom did they ask for? (Whom did they want?)
8. Look, Mehmet, look! Ahmet's come.

9. Please take this fruit.
10. Drink the coffee!
11. Come here, Mehmet! Ahmet has smashed something!
12. Understanding this is very hard.
13. How many times did you see us?
14. When did they get here?
15. Find them.

Exercise B.

1. *Onu bul! Bul!*
2. *Gül!*
3. *Beni gördü ve ben onu gördüm.*
4. *Gelsinler!*
5. *Bunlar büyük.*
6. *İzmiri ve Eskişehir'i gördüm.*
7. *Büyükler bunlar.*
8. *Çocuk dün geldi.*

16. You knew it yesterday.
17. Who asked for such a thing? (Who wanted something like this?)
18. I went, I saw (it), I came (back).
19. Please read this book today.
20. If only they'd come quickly! (I wish they would hurry!)

9. *Bu hafta gittiler.*
10. *Bu ay çok güzel.*
11. *On beş lira otuz beş kuruş istedi.*
12. *On beş lirayı dün aldım.*
13. *İki büyük halı aldılar.*
14. *Bu çok güç.*
15. *Bunlar çok kolay. Bu şeyler çok kolay.*

Lesson 8

Exercise A.

1. How many people came from Ankara yesterday morning?
Five people came.
Where did they come from?
From Ankara.
Ahmet and Mehmet came too.
Yes, they came too.
2. These rugs are very lovely, Ali.
Yes, (they are) very lovely.
Where did you find them?
I found them in İstanbul.
Where?
In the Kapalıçarşı.
How much did you get them for?
I gave 500 liras for the big rug.
3. On Tuesday Ahmet Bey came to İstanbul. He went to the Covered Bazaar. There he saw many things. He bought two pretty rugs. Later, he went to Taksim. That night he stayed in a hotel at Taksim. Wednesday morning at eight he went back to Ankara from İstanbul.
4. The girl went to İzmir yesterday.
5. Where did she come from?
6. She came from Ankara.
7. Where did you see Ahmet?
8. Where is the dog?
9. I saw the dog in the garden.
10. One day a cat saw a dog. The dog saw the cat. The cat stared and stared at the dog. Suddenly the cat ran out of the garden. He ran away quickly. The dog returned home from the garden.
11. From whom did they take (receive) the money?
12. They took the money from Mehmet.
13. How much money did they take?
14. To whom did Ahmet give the fifteen liras?
15. He gave the money to them.
16. Who drank the milk?
17. What did you drink?
18. Mother and Father talked about Ahmet.
19. You came very late.
20. Yes, we have come very late.

Exercise B.

1. *Ben de o kitabı istedim.*
2. *Ahmet Pazar günü döndü.*
3. *İzmirde kimi gördüler?*
4. *Kaç kilo peynir istedi?*
5. *İki yüz elli gram peynir istedi.*
6. *Bu peynir çok iyi.*
7. *Dün nereye gittiler?*
8. *Bu sabah nereden geldiniz?*
9. *Çocuklara kim baktı?*
10. *Dün Selma onlara baktı.*
11. *Ağaçta neyi gördün, Erdoğan?*
12. *Ağaçta kediye gördüm, baba.*
13. *Kutuda ne buldun, Erdoğan?*
14. *Kutuda on lira buldum.*
15. *Şekeri fincandan kim aldı?*

Lesson 9

Exercise A.

1. Ahmet! Didn't you go to school today?
2. No, Father. I didn't go to school today.
3. Did you go to the city?
4. No, Father. Today I didn't go either to school or to the city.
5. In that case, where did you go? What did you do?
6. I saw a garden. I went into the garden.
7. Which garden did you go into?
8. I didn't go to the big garden. I went into the small garden.
9. Have you been to Izmir? How long did you stay there?
I stayed there two, two and a half months.
10. Ahmet, be a good boy! Go to school. Go every day. Work very hard.
Have you understood (me), or not?
I have understood, Father.
11. Have you ever been to Ankara?
No, I've never gone there. I've certainly wanted to, but I've not gone. I haven't even been to Bursa. I've just seen one city—Istanbul. Have you been to Ankara?
Yes, I've gone there lots. I've been to Izmir. I've gone also to Adana.
12. How many times have you been to Adana?
To Adana? I've gone there five (or) six times.
In short, you've traveled a lot.
Yes, I have traveled a lot.
13. What did you think of Ankara? Is it pretty?
Yes, Ankara is pretty.
And Istanbul?
Istanbul? It's pretty, too, very lovely.
14. Where did you come from today?
Today I came from Adana.
What day did you go (had you gone) there?
I went there Saturday.
What did you think of Adana?
(It's) very big and very lovely. But it's hot!

15. Did they ask you for money, or not?
They did. They wanted 275 liras.
Did you give them the 275 liras, or not?
I wanted not to, but I did. Yesterday Ahmet gave (had given) me 300 liras.
Today I gave them the 275 liras.

Exercise B.

1. *Ahmet gitti mi?*
2. *Ahmet mi gitti?*
3. *Kitabı size verdiler mi? Hayır, vermediler.*
4. *Selma iki çocuğu gördü mü? Evet, gördü.*
5. *Niçin parayı bize vermediniz? İstemediniz mi?*
6. *Dün parayı Erdoğan'a verdim. Onu görmediniz mi?*
7. *Gelsinler mi, gelmesinler mi?*
8. *Ahmet niçin gelmesin?*
9. *Ne çay içti ne kahve.*
10. *Fahrünnisa hiç bir şey içmedi.*
11. *Hiç Ankaraya gittiler mi?*
12. *Hiç Ankaraya gittiniz mi?*
13. *İzmirden geldiler mi?*
14. *Hayır, oradan gelmediler. Adanadan geldiler.*
15. *Gazeteyi babaya verdiniz mi?*
16. *Evet, onu (ona) verdim.*
17. *Odada ne buldunuz?*
18. *Orada hiç bir şey bulmadım.*
19. *O kutuya ne peyniri koysun ne şekeri.*
20. *Ahmet gazeteyi okusun mu, okumasın mı?*

Lesson 10

Exercise A.

(Simple possessive constructions)

1. Ahmet's mother is very young.
2. Where's your house?
3. The child's father came.
4. Who's your father?
5. The city's water is quite good.
6. If only their father would come here!
7. It is to be hoped that their fathers won't go there!
8. Is this your book?
9. The rug owner took the money.

10. Whose apple is this?
11. The Turkish alphabet is easy.
12. Is Turkish difficult?
13. Is your garden pretty big?
14. Ankara Boulevard is lovely.
15. How lovely Ankara's boulevards are!
16. Is your bedroom small?
17. Our classroom is hot.
18. Does that woman own a car?
19. Where's the landlord?
20. Who owns this house?
21. My own book is in the house.
22. The landlord hasn't asked for the money.
23. They came Tuesday.
24. Where are the teacups? (or) Where are her/their teacups?
25. This textbook is very large.

Possessive complexes, etc.

1. Your father's eyes are handsome.
2. The trees of our city are very large.
3. Ahmet's two sons came.
4. Let the little child's mother come quickly!
5. The landlord's radio is a very good one.
6. Where's your landlord?
7. The house of your friend's mother is large.
8. We hope that our daughter's friends won't come here today.
9. Whose father's house is this?
10. What is your son's name?
11. Didn't they know their landlord's name?
12. Who should look after Ahmet's children?
13. I came through Beyoğlu's streets.
14. I put neither her books nor my own books into my sister's bedroom.
15. Didn't they take my books?
16. Don't give your father's money to the mother of those children!
17. Whom did you see at the Ankara kindergarten?
18. Haven't you seen my boy and Ahmet's two girls?
19. They took one book from my son.
20. It went from the Dardanelles to the Bosphorus.
21. When did they go to Beyoğlu?
22. Have you ever seen the Taurus Mountains?
23. He didn't want his friend's book.
24. He wanted his own book.
25. Don't come to my house! Go to your friend's house!

Exercise B.

1. *Ders odamızda kimi buldunuz ?*
2. *Ahmedin annesi çocukların yatak odasına girdi.*
3. *Kardeşimin ev sahibi otomobilini babamın garajına koydu.*
4. *Otomobil Beyoğlundan İstanbul Üniversitesine gitti.*
5. *Vapur Çanakkale Boğazından geçti.*
6. *Küçük kızkardeşinizin çay fincanları güzel.*
7. *Ev sahibimin kendi evi İstanbul Caddesinde.*
8. *Oğlunuzun ayakları büyük.*
9. *Küçük kardeşinizin ismi ne ?*
10. *Ahmedin kızkardeşi dün gece niçin kızkardeşlerinizin evine gitmedi ?*
11. *Hiç Beyoğluna gittiniz mi ?*
12. *Ahmet Karadenizi hiç görmedi, fakat Marmara Denizini gördü.*
13. *Annemin parasını Mehmedin ve Erdoğan'ın kızkardeşlerine verdiler.*
14. *Küçük ders odasından çıktı, büyük ders odasına girdi.*
15. *İstanbul şehri çok eski. Ankara şehri yeni.*
16. *Yeni Türk alfabesi kolay.*
17. *Oraya hiç gitmeyin.*
18. *Boğaziçi çok güzel. Çanakkale Boğazı da güzel.*
19. *Hiç Çanakkale Boğazını gördünüz mü ?*
20. *Dün Çanakkale Boğazına gitmediniz mi ?*
21. *Otomobil Beyoğlu caddelerinden geçti. Karaköyden geçmedi.*
22. *Babasının evi Afyonkarahisar'da.*
23. *Bu adam otomobil sahibi mi ?*
24. *Büyük otomobilin sahibi, o evin sahibinin kardeşine on lira verdi.*
25. *Arkadaşımın babasının otomobilinden kimen kitaplarını aldın ?*

Lesson 11

Exercise A.

1. Sir, we are very eager for you to come to our home. We await you sir; we anticipate (it).
2. To go to New York takes a lot of money.
3. What a pity for Selma to break all of Fahrünnisa's coffee cups!
4. Father, I intend to go to the movies.
Ahmet, have you studied your schoolbook? Is your lesson ready?
I've studied hard, Father. I have read (it) twice.
What do you say, Selma? Ought the boy to go to the movies tonight, or not?
Certainly, Mehmet, let him go. Why shouldn't he go?
All right, let him go. On your way now, Ahmet! But don't stay out late!
Thanks, Father. And I thank you, too, Mother. I'll not be late.

5. What's the meaning of this, Ahmet? You've only got a six in your Turkish. What's happened? Didn't you work? Work hard! For that matter, it's always necessary to work in life. Have you understood or not?
I have understood, Father. I'll work. I'll really work.
6. Will you have a (cup of) tea, sir?
Thank you, no. I never drink tea.
In that case, may it not be a (cup of) coffee, sir?
I thank you, madam. Would you please give me a cup of coffee?
7. Ahmet Bey preferred to drink coffee rather than tea.
8. Ahmet read his textbook without getting the sense of a single word.
9. We hope you have (a) good trip, Ahmet Bey! Bon voyage! (May your road be open!)
10. Mehmet comes to our house each morning. It would be fine if his older brother Erdoğan would come, too.
11. We pay the ticketsellers on the buses; they hand us our tickets.
12. Each morning Ahmet Bey eats breakfast, reads the paper, and goes to his office.
13. Each morning Selma Hanım eats breakfast, cares for the house, and goes to market.
14. Ahmet Bey eats his lunch in a restaurant.
15. Do you drink tea?
16. No, sir. I never drink tea.
17. Selim Bey knows French well. He studied French at Istanbul University for three and one half years.
18. Has Ahmet come or not?
19. He hasn't come yet. But, he will come, sir. He will come.
20. This train leaves the station at eight o'clock.

Exercise B.

1. *Selma bir bardak süt içer mi?*
2. *Teşekkür ederiz, hanımefendi. Selma hiç süt içmez. Lütfen, ona bir bardak su verir misiniz?*
3. *Selma, süt içmektense su içmeyi tercih eder.*
4. *Dün sabah Kapalıçarşıda Ahmet Bey iki güzel halı gördü.*
5. *İkisini de almak istedi.*
6. *Halı sahibi küçüğe iki bin lira, büyüğe beş bin lira istedi.*
7. *Ahmet Bey, 'O çok pahalı. İkisine dört bin beş yüz lira veririm,' dedi.*
8. *Adam, hiç beklemeden, 'Hayır. Ben ikisine yedi bin lira isterim,' dedi.*
9. *Neticede, Ahmet Bey Kapalıçarşıdan, halıları almadan çıktı.*
10. *O eve döner dönmez, eşi, 'Halı aldın mı?' dedi.*
11. *'Hayır, almadım. Halı sahibi iki güzel halıya yedi bin lira istedi. Çarşıdan halıları almadan çıktım,' dedi.*
12. *Eşi, 'Çok fena!' dedi.*
13. *Ahmet Bey, 'Ya yazık,' dedi, 'fakat o yedi bin lira istedi. Çok pahalı buldum.'*
14. *Eşi, 'Amma ben yeni halı isterim,' dedi.*
15. *Ahmet Bey, 'Evet şekerim,' dedi. 'Güzel bir halı bulmaya çalışırım.'*

Lesson 12

Exercise A.

1. My house is bigger than your house.
2. Will it be (a) good (thing) for Sait to come from America ? Sait hasn't come from America yet. He will come in the month of June.
3. In that year we used to go to Ankara once a month.
4. Will you please give me the salt ?
5. What do you say, sir ; shall we go there or not ?
6. Have they come to you (your house) ?
Yes, sir, they have come twice.
Twice ? In that case they'll come to our house, too.
They certainly will.
7. Didn't you go to the Ahmet Beys' ?
I didn't. In fact, I never go there.
8. As soon as I opened the newspaper, this was what I saw.
9. The two youngsters started to run.
10. The girl's hair is jet black.
11. Reading lots of books is (a) good (thing).
12. The little girl's reading is good.
13. Who wrote these (writings) ?
I did.
My boy, don't write like this ! One must write better !
14. To whom do the best apples belong ?
15. Are these yours ?
16. My father gets up at 7:00, eats breakfast, reads the paper, gets into the car at 8:30, and goes to his office.
17. Doesn't he want to study ?
Not at all.
18. Aren't you going to go today ?
19. No, but I'll go tomorrow.
20. To whom will you give these ?
21. Ahmet won't go to Italy without having given me the money.
22. In your opinion, does (will, would) Ahmet take my money ?
23. Shall Ahmet go to your mother's house tomorrow, or not ?
24. They didn't come yesterday but they will come tomorrow.
25. Will you or will you not give us the money ?

Exercise B.

1. *Niye Beyoğluna gitmiyeceksin ?*
2. *Selmanın babası otomobilini kimden satın aldı ?*
3. *Onu hangi garaja koyacak ?*
4. *Hangi sinemaya gidecekler ?*
5. *Mehmet hiç sinemaya gitmez.*

6. *Sinemaya haftada iki defa giderdik.*
7. *Bence, oğlunuzun bu kitabı okumaması fena(dır).*
8. *Onlar günlerce aradılar, fakat köpeği bulmadılar.*
9. *Kimi bekledin?*
10. *Seni yarın evimde bekliyeceğim.*
11. *Ankaraya gelir gelmez Mehmet Bey'e telefon ettim.*
12. *O, kitapları size vermeden Ankaraya gitmiyecek.*
13. *Köpeğim Selmanın köpeğinden (daha) büyük(tür).*
14. *Onun köpeği bembeyaz fakat benim köpeğim simsiyah.*
15. *Yavaş gidiniz!*
16. *İyi anlamadım.*
17. *En küçük kız en büyük elmayı yedi.*
18. *Ahmet gelecek mi, gelmiyecek mi?*
19. *Ahmedin fikrince Selma gelsin mi, gelmesin mi?*
20. *Niçin daha çok çalışmazsınız?*

Lesson 13

Exercise A.

1. Who passed behind us?
2. Won't they pass in front of us?
3. Who came after you (did)? Who came behind you?
4. Because of you, your brother also came late.
5. Why didn't you give me an apple like this one?
6. What did you find in the box?
7. He took the newspaper from his pocket.
8. His house is on the mountain's top.
9. The dog knows his master's voice.
10. They brought tea for me.
11. Why did they come before eight o'clock?
12. The child wrote with his father's pencil.
13. Why did you work?
14. We strove in order to understand, and to learn.
15. I have never read a book like this.

Exercise B.

1. *Ahmet cebine ne koydu?*
2. *Selma çay fincanlarını nerede buldu?*
3. *Kutuda bir fincan buldu, diğerlerini arkasında buldu.*
4. *Kitabımı kim aldı?*
5. *Ahmet aldı.*
6. *Nereye koydu?*

7. Ağacın yanına koydu.
8. Nilüfer nerede?
9. Sinemaya gitti.
10. Yalnız mı gitti?
11. Hayır.
12. Kiminle gitti?
13. Ahmedin kızkardeşiyle gitti.
14. Geç kalacaklar mı?
15. Hayır, buraya saat dokuz buçuktan evvel gelecekler.

Lesson 14

Exercise A.

1. Where's your car, Ahmet Bey?
2. I don't have a car, sir. I used to (I did have one), but I've sold it.
3. Was your car good, Ahmet Bey?
4. It wasn't good. It was very old. That's why I sold it.
5. Where's little Selma, Mihri Hanım?
6. She's not here. I haven't seen Selma today.
7. But she'll come here today, won't she?
8. Yes, Mihri Hanım, I hope she's going to come.
9. Who was at your house yesterday afternoon?
10. Mehmet was (there). Ahmet was (there). A few friends came in. We sat (around and) talked. That's all . . .
11. You have two sisters, don't you?
12. No, I have only one sister, but my husband has two sisters.
13. Are there apples in Turkey?
14. Yes, in fact there are lots of apples.
15. You have two apple trees in your yard, don't you?

Exercise B.

1. Kimin kitabı bu? Bu kitap kimin(dir)?
2. Kimin kitabı yok(tur)?
3. Bunlar sizin, değil mi?
4. Bunlar sizin değil(dir), değil mi?
5. (Onun) dört kızkardeşi vardı, değil mi?
6. Senin kitabın evimde(dir).
7. Evlerinde kitap yok.
8. Ahmedin babasının iki otomobili var(dır).
9. Babanızın otomobili yoktu, değil mi?
10. Ahmet orada mı(dır)?

Lesson 15

Exercise A.

1. Is your brother's bedroom upstairs or downstairs?
2. Have you seen our sister?
3. Who took the money from under the box?
4. Ahmet [the narrator says] came here yesterday morning, said this and said that, then took my sister's money and departed.
5. According to Ahmet, they don't come here.
6. We found two places in the front of the streetcar.
7. My boy, don't go indoors today!
8. Had he not gone to Istanbul before 1937?
9. The water came up to his mouth.
10. According to you, my sister did not get into Ahmet's car.
11. What else did they want? (Apart from that, what . . .)
12. Why won't they come?
13. They won't be particularly anxious to come here.
14. What did he put into the teacups?
15. The train stayed five minutes in the station.
16. You haven't gone to Turkey for a long time.
17. Does your house have a garden?
18. The youngsters started on a trip five days ago.
19. Is this house for sale or rent?
20. Istanbul has many daily newspapers.
21. Despite the fact that I am poor, I won't take money from that man!
22. Ahmet and Erdoğan (apparently) worked hard in order to go to Istanbul.
23. Do you want to keep the big box? (Should it stay with you . . .?)
Yes, let it stay (here) for a week or so.
24. Don't cross in front of the train!
25. Children, please don't open the outside door!

Exercise B.

1. *Mehmet! Ahmet İstanbula gitti mi?
Onu görmedim. Fakat her halde gitmiştir.
Erdoğan! Siz Ahmed'i gördünüz mü?
Gördüm, efendim. İstanbula gitmedi. Edirneye gitti.*
2. *Kahveniz şekerli mi olsun, şekersiz mi (olsun)?*
3. *Ben limonlu çay severim.*
4. *Bu sütli kahve çok iyidir.*
5. *Ahmed'in kardeşi 1955 senesinden evvel ölmüş müydü?*
6. *1949 senesinde iki evim vardı. Şimdi üç tane var.*

7. *O zaman evli değildiniz, değil mi ?*
8. *Babam daima iyilik, doğruluk ve güzellik istedi.*
9. *Ahmede göre gitmemiş.*
10. *Ahmede göre gitmemiş idi.*

Lesson 16

Exercise A.

1. What is the name of the newcomer?
2. They didn't tell me that Ahmet had come (came) yesterday.
3. We hoped that you would find your money.
4. What is the name of the man to whom you rented your house?
5. Which (one) of these did they want?
6. Those who know this well are few. (Not many people know this well.)
7. How many persons want to go to Beyoğlu?
8. Didn't you see who came?
9. The teacher told us that our children work (have worked) hard in their lessons (classes).
10. Because Ahmet didn't (hasn't) come here, my father wrote me a letter.
11. Of the cities you've seen, which one is the most lovely?
12. Didn't you see the car of the man who came yesterday, out in front of my house?
13. Has the woman whose house you bought gone to France?
14. Although they came here a number of times, we didn't give them anything.
15. Did he say who it was who bought the best apples?
16. This sort of a thing doesn't happen once in a hundred years.
17. Whom did you see at the door?
Apparently somebody came a half an hour ago, sir.
18. Those who are going to board the train should wait here.
19. He said for the people who are going to get on the train to wait here.
20. The mother of the girl who found Ahmet's money gave the money to me.

Exercise B.

1. *Bu elmalardan en büyüğünü istiyen kimdir ?*
2. *Evinizi sattığınız kadının ismi nedir ?*
3. *Evini satın aldığınız adam nerede oturdu ?*
4. *İçine sütü koyduğum fincanı kim kırdı ?*
5. *Ahmet kimin geldiğini görmedi.*
6. *Ahmet kimin geldiğini görmediğini söyledi.*
7. *Ahmet kimin geleceğini bana sordu.*
8. *Size telefon ettikten sonra evden çıktım.*
9. *Türkçeyi iyi bildiğinizden dolayı onlara bir mektup yazar mısınız, lütfen ?*
10. *Onlara bir mektup yazacağını söyledi.*

Lesson 17

Exercise A.

1. Even though you didn't come, Ahmet won't ask for the money, will he?
2. You'll find the watch inside the iron box.
3. I'll get the key from the doorkeeper, won't I?
4. Don't you have a car?
5. They didn't know that Fahrünnisa was coming that day, did they?
6. Which one (of them) did he want?
7. These aren't his.
8. He said that its color was snow white.
9. It's clear that he wanted the prettiest one of these.
10. The day Selma came here she gave Fahrünnisa two kilos of coffee.
11. Mine are better than yours.
12. Won't you say where you put the book you read?
13. What I read (was reading) wasn't a book. I read a weekly magazine.
14. That fellow seems to have a lot of money. His father is wealthy, too.
15. Although his father is rich, Ahmet doesn't seem to have very much money.
16. After you have come here, you'll learn the language very quickly.
17. The name of the daughter of the man to whom I sold my car is Selma.
18. The minute I saw it (her, him), Ahmet arrived.
19. Which (ones) of the books in your house should they (ought they to) take?
20. How much money did he ask for this tiny rug?
21. Where's the entrance?
22. According to what Erdoğan says (said), their house is (should be) very nice.
23. This is not a matter which will happen in this fashion.
24. Don't you say, "I won't read the book Ahmet gave me!"
25. Mehmet had not read the book that Ahmet gave him.
26. How much does this house rent for?
This house isn't for rent.
Sir, in the entire city isn't there a house for rent?
There are very few, but you'll find two of them over across from the mosque.
In your view, which of them is the better?
As I see it, the little one (of them) is the better.
27. They didn't like the water they drank.
28. How was the movie? Did you enjoy it?
29. Who are those people with them?
30. They seem not to be natives (or residents) of Istanbul; they're from Antalya.
31. She's not a woman who'll talk in such a fashion.
32. Old houses have two parts: one of them is the *selâmlık*, i.e., the men's section; the other part is the *harem*, i.e., the part for the women.

33. I've not been to the movies since I was a child.
34. (All right) let them say, 'If only he would come! If only he would come!' I'm not going to go.
35. They'll say that there's no news of him.

Exercise B.

1. *Anneciğim, buraya gelin, lütfen!*
2. *Bahçemdeki elma ağaçları bahçenizdekilerden daha büyüktür.*
3. *Fotoğrafçılar hep beraber Ankara'ya gittiler.*
4. *Bu binanın üç (tane) çıkışı vardır.*
5. *Selma, babasının yeni bir otomobil satın alacağını bana söyledi.*
6. *Mehmet gelmediği için Ahmed'in de gelmeyeceğini ümit ederim.*
7. *Babanızın yazıcısı yok mudur?*
8. *Dün gece gördüğümüz filmi beğenmedim.*
9. *Hava çok fena olduğundan onları görmeye gitmeyeceğiz.*
10. *Yatak odasındakine kaç para istedi?*

Lesson 18

Exercise A.

1. We're going to the movies, Hasan Bey. Won't you come along, too?
2. What theater are you going to?
3. We're going to the Crystal. A very good film is playing. Come on! You'll have a great time.
4. To tell the truth (the truth of it is), Mehmet Bey, I don't particularly like movies. In addition, I've got a lot of work.
5. That's too bad, Hasan Bey. In that case, you take care of (do) your work. We'll be on our way. Good-bye.
6. Good-bye, sir. I hope the film is good. Perhaps next week I, too, will see that picture.
7. Hasan Bey was just about to go to the movies, but because he had a lot of work he changed his mind and didn't go.
8. Do you know the name of the girl whose father is in Paris?
9. I do. Her name is Selma.
10. While her father is staying in Paris, where will Selma live?
11. At present she is staying with us. Next month, when her father has come back from France, she'll live with him in their own house.
12. The children left the school two by two.
13. We all gave twenty liras apiece.
14. Mihri says that Mehmet is going to come tomorrow.
15. Do you really believe that he's coming?

Exercise B.

1. *Bu akşam babam evde çalışıyor. Onun için otomobilin anahtarını bana vereceğini ümit ediyorum.*
2. *Ne yapıyorsunuz?*
3. *Kızkardeşime bir mektup yazıyorum.*
4. *Ankaradaki kızkardeşinize mi İzmirdekine mi yazıyorsunuz?*
5. *İzmirdekine.*
6. *Ben Bursaya gitmek üzereydim, fakat babam parayı bana vermedi.*
7. *Mehmet, Ahmet kitabını aldı diye, Ahmedin babasına telefon etti.*
8. *Sait, Ahmet yarın gelecek diye yazıyor.*
9. *Ben eve gidiyorum. Allaha ısmarladık, Mehmet.*
10. *Güle güle, Ahmet.*

Lesson 19

Exercise A.

1. Won't the car go faster?
It can't go any faster.
2. You can go there after you have received your passport.
3. Do you know who owns the car out there on the street?
4. We hope that you'll be able to go tomorrow.
5. (aboard a streetcar)
Move up towards the front, gentlemen. There's lots of empty space there.
Is there anyone who wants to get off here? Is there anyone who is going to get off at Galatasaray?
6. (on the telephone)
Hello, hello! What number do I have, sir?
This is the İhsan Company, sir.
Is Ahmet Bey there?
Which Ahmet Bey do you want, sir?
Mr. Ahmet Mehmedoğlu.
No, sir. He doesn't seem to be here. He must have gone out. He was here half an hour ago.
Who are you, sir?
I (am) Erdoğan Yılmaz.
Erdoğan Bey! Is that you?
It's me, sir. And you?
I (am) Sait from Ankara. I got here today.
My goodness, Sait Bey. Welcome!
Thank you, my good friend Erdoğan. How are you? Are you in good shape?
I certainly hope you're fine.
Thanks, Sait. I'm very well. And you, how are you?
Thank you, too. What's new, Erdoğan?
Well, Erdoğan Bey. I've got an appointment. Good-bye. Will you please tell Ahmet Bey that I'll phone him again tomorrow?
Sure, Sait Bey! I'll tell (him). Good-bye, sir!

7. The old woman sat weeping bitterly.
8. This is the smallest of my children's friends.
9. To hear them tell it, you're alleged to have gone there a couple of times.
10. The biggest of the cities you'll see in Turkey is Istanbul.
11. Ahmet wrote that he bought two nice rugs.
12. Is it so that you've got two big trees out behind your house?
13. Ahmet! Take this money, run fast down to the tobacconist's store, and quickly buy two newspapers!
14. Do you know the name of the individual who purchased the newspapers?
15. I do not believe that there is a more beautiful mountain in all the world.
16. What is this fellow's job? Is he a newsman or is he a teacher?
17. We hope that Süheylâ's sister will stay with us for two or three nights.
18. Why didn't you come, Ahmet?
19. You'll be able to get here every morning at 9:30, won't you?
20. I don't believe that you'll be able to get here every morning.

Exercise B.

1. *Ahmet, 'Kitabımı bulamıyorum,' dedi.*
2. *Ahmet kendi kitabını bulamadığını söyledi.*
3. *İnşallah, bana haftada bir yazabileceksiniz.*
4. *Niçin binaya giremediniz?*
5. *Yarın Ankaraya gidebilecek misiniz?*
6. *Girebilir miyim?*
7. *Bunu iyi okuyabileceğinizi biliyorum.*
8. *Onların niçin gelemediklerini biliyor musunuz?*
9. *Ahmedin otomobilin anahtarını bulamıyacağı bellidir.*
10. *Bütün okuduğum kitaplardan en iyisinin bu olduğunu söyleyebilirim.*

Lesson 20

Exercise A.

1. Why didn't you eat?
2. What do you say, sir? Should I go there today, or not?
3. No matter who comes, I'll give this book only to Ahmet Bey.
4. Must you really go in (after) one hour?
5. If you'll just glance (look once thus) at the watch in your hand, you'll see that it's nine thirty.
6. I am afraid that no one can come here tomorrow.
7. They weren't obliged to come here immediately.
8. Do you know why she couldn't phone?
9. It doesn't snow in our city.
10. Erdoğan's wife said that her mother had been sick for two months but had then gone back to Ankara.

11. Say what you will, I saw with my own eyes that they were ready to go.
12. If he doesn't give you back the watch he took out of your big chest, you'll have to (you'll remain in the necessity to) tell his mother the truth (about it), won't you?
13. Let her do what she wants. (Let her do it the way she wants.)
14. Hey, kids! Time's going fast. Come, let's go!
15. Sir, with your permission may I take a small bit of bread?
16. My son preferred to go to the movies rather than go to school.
17. You don't know where the bookshop Ahmet described to us yesterday is, do you?
18. They didn't say that he hadn't gone, did they?
19. They couldn't say that he wouldn't go, could they?
20. Don't you know that he can't come?

Exercise B.

1. *Size bir fincan çay vereyim mi, efendim?*
2. *Ben gitmezsem siz de gitmiyecek misiniz?*
3. *Neden bahsedelim?*
4. *Hakikaten gitmeli miydiniz?*
5. *Hakikaten gitmeli misiniz?*
6. *Siz ne dersiniz? Biz gidelim mi, gitmeyelim mi?*
7. *O gelirse kitabı ona vereceğiz.*
8. *Onlar ise gidemediler.*
9. *'Teşekkür ederim, efendim,' deyin.*
10. *Parayı bize vermek mecburiyetinde değildi.*

Lesson 21

Exercise A.

1. Was the teacup broken?
2. As I view it, that is something which really can't be known.
3. The books written by that man are hard to come by nowadays.
4. Ahmet was in Beyoğlu yesterday.
5. Was the cup broken by you?
6. The news was officially announced by the government.
7. They sat me down on a chair and wouldn't let me go.
8. I have to go, sir. In fact, I'm late. Good-bye for now.
Good-bye, Mehmet Bey. I hope we'll get together again.
9. The big box wouldn't go through the door. Therefore it was let down from the window.
10. It can't be said that that man never came (comes) to our house. He has come a few times.

11. We talked about Ahmet for two hours. Then we reached a decision. Everything was agreed upon.
12. No matter what they say, we won't let (give permission to) you (to) go there.
13. Permit me to assist you, Sir!
14. I want two third-class tickets, please.
15. Have you forgotten what you yourself said?
16. By whom was this house built?
17. Didn't you ask them where they'd put the money?
18. Don't ask me that!
19. They washed in the sea.
20. If I have to go to Izmir Friday, I don't know what I'll do.
21. These new factories are being developed.
22. According to what is being said, he will never come back from Istanbul.
23. If you don't work, you won't be able to learn.
24. Who is teaching you Turkish?
25. Instead of the word *talebe* in old Turkish, today the word *öğrenci* is more frequently used.

Exercise B.

1. *Bu su içilmez.*
2. *Gelecek hafta Adanada buluşuruz. Anlaşıldı.*
3. *Bu tütün Türkiyeden getirilir.*
4. *Ahmet tütünü Mehmede getirtti.*
5. *Bu yoldan İzmir'e gidilmez.*
6. *Yol genişlettiriliyor.*
7. *Oğlum, çabuk giyin!*
8. *Bu haber hükümetçe bildirildi.*
9. *Dikkat ediniz! O kırılır.*
10. *Onun elyazısı okunmaz.*

Lesson 22

Exercise A.

1. You don't know whether Ahmet Bey will go to the movies with us tomorrow, do you?
2. While I was in Beyoğlu, some thief entered my house, silenced my dog, and took two good rugs and 500 liras.
3. Because they couldn't keep the children quiet, the teachers wrote letters of complaint to each of their fathers.
4. Goodness, Erdoğan Bey! How your son has grown! I can't believe my eyes.
5. Because we don't know which of your friends will be able to come, we still haven't decided which restaurant to eat in.

6. I can't exactly remember how many months it has been since Süheylâ Hanım took sick.
7. They had known for a long time that I couldn't come that day.
Therefore I just somehow can't understand why they didn't remind you of it.
8. When the girl saw her father she began both to run and to weep.
9. If I have to stay more than two weeks in Istanbul, I'll not be able to meet with you in Ankara.
10. Since I wasn't sure whether your mother knew you had been in Ankara that week, I didn't show either her or your father the snapshot that I took there.
11. If they decide not to go there but to stay here, I'm sure they'll ask me for the books which I had promised would be sent to you.
12. Is it better for you to live in Istanbul than in Ankara?
13. As is known, one can't get into the library on holidays.
14. When the door was opened, the children ran to their places and sat down.
15. If they aren't made to unite, they'll not be able to do what they want to do.
16. The doctor would go to his office each day and receive his patients.
17. If you don't go, what will happen?
18. Although I've never gone there, they write me a letter every week and say that they are always expecting me.
19. Because the weather was bad we did not go swimming.
20. Have you forgotten that seeing is believing?

Exercise B.

1. *Kapıyı açarak otomobile binip gitti.*
2. *Dünyanın küçüldüğünü unutmayınız.*
3. *Ahmed'in bu kitabı okuyup okumadığını biliyor musunuz?*
4. *Çok çalışarak Türkçeyi iyi öğrendi.*
5. *Fiyatlar gittikçe yükseldi.*
6. *Giderken bana bir lira verdi.*
7. *Oraya gidip ona biraz para verirse çok iyi olur.*
8. *Oraya gitmeyip burada kalmak istediler.*
9. *Oraya gitmemeye ve burada kalmaya karar verdiler.*
10. *Onların oraya gitmemeye ve burada kalmaya karar verdiklerini söylüyor.*

Vocabulary

açık *open*
açılmak (açılır) *to be opened*
açmak (açar) *to open (trans.)*
adam *man*
afyon *poppy, opium*
ağabeyi *elder brother*
ağaç (ağacı) *tree*
ağız (ağzi) *mouth*
ağlamak (ağlar) *to weep*
Ağustos *August*
Ahmet (Ahmedi) *man's name*
ak *white*
akmak (akar) *to run, flow*
akşam *evening*
akşam yemeği *evening meal*
açak *low*
alfabe *alphabet*
alışmak (alışır) *to be or become accustomed to (with dat.)*
Ali *man's name*
âli *lofty, sublime*
Allah *God*
almak (alır) *to buy, get, take*
alo *hello (on the telephone)*
alt *bottom*
altı *six*
altın *gold*

altmış *sixty*
aman *oh! alas! my goodness!*
amma *but*
anahtar *key*
anlamak (anlar) *to understand*
anlaşılacak (anlaşılır) *to be understood, agreed*
anlatılmak (anlatılır) *to be explained*
anlatmak (anlatır) *to explain, recount, make understand*
anlayış *penetration; manner of understanding*
anlayışlı *perceptive*
anne *mother*
apartıman *apartment building*
ara *midst, interval*
arka *back*
Aralık *December*
aramak (arar) *to search for*
Arap (Arabı) *Arab*
arkadaş *friend*
Arnavutköy *'Albanian Village' (a suburb of Istanbul)*
aşağı *down*
at *horse*
ata *ancestor*
ayak (ayağı) *foot*

ayrılmak (ayrılır) *to depart, go away from*
az *few, (a) little, insufficient; less*
baba *father*
bacak (bacağı) *leg*
bahçe *garden, yard*
bahçeli *having a garden*
bahsetmek *to discuss, talk about (with abl.), to mention*
bakmak (bakar) *to look, look at (with dat.), look after (with dat.)*
bando *band (musical)*
banka *bank*
bankacı *banker*
bankacılık *the banking business*
bardak (bardağı) *drinking glass*
baş *head*
başka *another; other than (with abl.)*
başlamak (başlar) *to start to (with dat.)*
Bay *Mr.*
Bayan *Mrs.; Miss*
bayat *stale*
bayram *holiday*
bazı *some (with plural)*
beğenmek (beğenir) *like, approve, enjoy (trans.)*
beklemek (bekler) *to await, wait for (with obj. def.)*
belki *perhaps*
belli *clear, evident, plain*
bembeyaz *very white*
ben *I*
beraber *together*
beri *since (with abl.)*

beş *five*
Bey *Mr.*
beyaz *white*
Beyoğlu *downtown section of Istanbul*
bıkmak (bıkar) *to get tired of (with abl.)*
biber *pepper*
bildirilmek (bildirilir) *to be announced*
bildirmek (bildirir) *to inform, announce, cause to know*
bile *even*
bilet *ticket*
biletçi *ticket man*
bilinmek (bilinir) *to be known*
bilmek (bilir) *to know*
bin *thousand*
bina *building*
binmek (binir) (with dat.) *to get on (a horse, etc.), to get in (a car, etc.), to board (a ship)*
bir *one; a, an*
birisi *someone*
birleştirilmek (birleştirilir) *to be united*
bir şey *something*
bitirmek (bitirir) *to end (trans.)*
bitmek (biter) *to end (intrans.)*
biz *we*
boş *empty*
böyle *thus, in this fashion*
bu *this, these*
buçuk *one half (used only with other numbers)*
bulmak (bulur) *to find*

bulunmak (bulunur) *to be found; to be*

buluşmak (buluşur) *to meet together, to convey (intrans.)*

buluşturulmak (buluşturulur) *to be caused to meet or get together*

bulvar *boulevard*

bura* *here, this place*

büro *office*

bütün *whole, entire, all*

büyük *big, large, great*

büyüklik *largeness, bigness, greatness*

büyümek (büyür) *to grow larger*

cadde *street, avenue*

camî *mosque*

cep (cebi) *pocket*

Cuma (günü) *Friday*

Cumartesi (günü) *Saturday*

çabuk *fast*

çalışmak (çalışır) *to work, work hard*

çarçabuk *extremely swift*

çarpmak (çarpar) *to collide*

çarptırılmak (çarptırılır) *to be caused to collide*

çarptırmak (çarptırır) *to cause to collide*

çarpmak (çarpar) *to hit, strike against (with dat.)*

Çarşamba (günü) *Wednesday*

çarşı *market, bazaar*

çay *tea*

çekmek (çeker) *to pull fotoğraf çekmek to take a photograph*

çeyrek *quarter*

çıkış *exit; manner of going out*

çıkma (çıkma) *to go out of (with abl.); to go up; to come up to (with dat.); to set forth on (with dat.)*

çıplak *naked*

çiçek *flower*

çocuk (çocuğu) *child*

çocukluk *childhood; childishness*

çok (çoğu) *much, many, very*

çünkü *because*

dv² *also, too, for X's part, in X's turn*

dağ *mountain*

daha *more*

daima *always*

dakika *minute (time)*

defa *time, occurrence*

değil *not (with 'to be')*

demek (der) *to say, speak (used only with direct quotation)*
Demek, gittin. *In other words (that is to say), you went.*

demir *iron*

deniz *sea, ocean*

derhal *immediately*

ders *lesson, class*

dış *outside*

dışarı *outside*

diğer (the) *other*

dikkat *caution dikkat etmek to be careful (with dat.), to pay attention*

dilim *slice*

diş *tooth*

doğru *right, true, straight; straight toward (with dat.)*

doğruluk *rightness, straightness*

doksan *ninety*
 dokuz *nine*
 dolar *dollar*
 dolayı *because of (with abl.)*
 dönmek (döner) *to turn*
 (intrans.); to return, go back to
 (with dat.)
 dört (dördü) *four*
 dükkân *shop, store*
 dün *yesterday*
 dünya *world*
 edebî *literary*
 efendi *gentleman, sir*
 eğer *if*
 Ekim *October*
 ekmek *bread, loaf of bread*
 el *hand*
 elektrik (elektriği) *electricity*
 elektriksiz *not electrified*
 elektrikli *electrified*
 elli *fifty*
 elma *apple*
 emin *certain of, sure of (with*
 abl. or dat.)
 en *(the) most*
 endişe *anxiety* endişe etmek *to*
 worry
 Erdoğan *man's name*
 erkek *male*
 erken *early*
 eski *old*
 eş *wife, husband*
 et *meat*
 etmek (eder) *to do, to make*
 (auxiliary verb)
 ev *house*

ev sahibi *house owner; landlord*
 evvel *before (with abl.)*
 evet *yes*
 evli *married*
 evlilik *matrimony*
 Eylül *September*
 eyvallah *(mild exclamation,*
 Arabic) Ah, by God! So be it!
 fabrika *factory*
 Fahrünnisa *woman's name*
 fakat *but*
 fakirlik *poverty*
 fazla *more than (with abl.), too*
 much
 fena *baa*
 fikir (fikri) *idea*
 fil *elephant*
 film (filmi) *(photographic) film;*
 moving picture
 fincan *cup*
 fiyat *price*
 fotoğraf *photograph*
 fotoğrafçı *photographer*
 Fransız *French*
 Fransızca *the French language*
 frenk *Frank (i.e. west European)*
 garaj *garage*
 gâvur *heathen*
 gazete *newspaper*
 gazeteci *newspaperman*
 gazetecilik *journalism*
 gece *night*
 geç *late*
 geçilmek (geçilir) *to be crossed*
 over

geçmek (geçer) *to cross over*
(with abl., dat., and acc.)

gelişmek (gelişir) *to flourish, to*
develop (intrans.)

geliştirilmek (geliştirilir) *to be*
developed

gelmek (gelir) *to come*

genç *young*

genişletilmek (genişletilir) *to be*
widened

gerek *right, proper, necessary*

getirilmek (getirilir) *to be brought*

getirmek (getirir) *to bring, to*
import

gram (or gram) *gram*

gibi *like (postposition)*

gidilmek (gidilir) *to go*
(impersonal)

gidiş *manner of going*

girilmek (girilir) *to be entered*

giriş *entrance; manner of going in*

girmek (girer) *to go into (with*
dat.)

gitmek (gider) *to go*

giyinmek (giyinir) *to dress*
(reflexive)

giymek (giyer) *to wear (clothing)*

göl *lake*

gönderilmek (gönderilir) *to be*
sent

göndermek (gönderir) *to send*

göre *according to (with dat.)*

görmek (görür) *to see*

görücü *matchmaker*

görünmek (göünür) *to be visible,*
to seem

görüşmek (görüşür) *to converse,*
discuss

görüşülmek (görüşülür) *to be*
discussed

görüştürmek (görüştürür) *to*
cause to converse

görüştürülmek (görüştürülür) *to*
be made to converse with each
other

göstermek (gösterir) *to display,*
show (trans.)

göz *eye*

gözlük *eyeglasses*

güç *difficult*

güçlük *difficulty*

gülmek (güler) *to laugh*

gümüş *silver*

gün *day*

günlük *daily*

güzел *pretty, lovely, nice, fine*

güzellik *beauty*

ha *so!*

haber *news*

hafta *week*

haftalık *weekly*

hak (hakkı) *right, truth; God*
bunun hakkında concerning
this

hakikat (hakikati) *fact, reality*

hakikaten *really*

Hakkı *man's name*

hal (hali) *circumstance, situation,*
condition; (with relative gerund)
although

halı *rug*

hangi *which? what?*

Hanım *Mrs.; Miss*

harem *women's section of old*
Turkish house

hasta *sick*

hatırlamak (hatırlar) *to remember*
 hatırlatmak (hatırlatır) *to cause to remember*
 hava *air; weather*
 havuz *pool*
 hay! hay! (*exclamation of enthusiasm*)
 hayat *life*
 haydi (*interjection*) *Well! Hey! Come on!*
 hayır *no (opposite of yes)*
 hazır *ready, prepared*
 Haziran *June*
 henüz *as yet*
 hep (hepsi) *all*
 her *each, every*
 hırsız *thief*
 hiç *none; nothing; never, ever (with positive verb)* hiç bir *not a*
 hisar *fortress, castle*
 hoş *fortunate; pleasing* Hoşuna gider. *It pleases him. He enjoys it.*
 hükümet *government*
 ırmak *river*
 ısmarlamak (ısmarlar) *to commend to, order*
 iç *inside*
 içeri *inside*
 içilmek (içilir) *to be drunk (passive of 'to drink')*
 için *for*
 içirilmek (içirilir) *to be caused to drink*
 içirmek (içirir) *to cause to drink*

içmek (içer) *to drink*
 ihtiyarlamak (ihtiyarlar) *to grow old*
 iki *two*
 iktisadî *economic, economical*
 ile *with*
 ilk *first*
 inanmak (inanır) *to believe (with dat.)*
 indirilmek (indirilir) *to be lowered*
 indirmek (indirir) *to cause to descend; to lower*
 İngilizce *the English language*
 inmek (iner) *to descend from, dismount, get out of (with abl. or dat.)*
 inşallah *if God will; I hope . . .*
 ise (*conditional sign*); *however, as for*
 isim (ismi) *name*
 iskemle *chair*
 İsmail *man's name*
 ispirto *spirits, alcohol*
 istasyon *station*
 istemek (ister) *to want, wish, desire, need, require*
 iş *matter, work, job, business* iş görmek *to do work, have a job*
 işte *so, thus, all right, etc.*
 İtalya *Italy*
 itmek (iter) *to push*
 iyi *good*
 iyileşmek (iyileşir) *to grow better, improve (intrans.)*
 iyilik *goodness, the good*
 Japonya *Japan*

kaatil <i>murderer</i>	kılmak (kılır) <i>to make, do</i> (archaic)
kaç <i>how much? how many?</i>	kırmak (kırar) <i>to break (trans.)</i>
kaçışmak (kaçışır) <i>(for all) to flee; to run off in different directions</i>	kırılmak (kırılır) <i>to be broken; to break (intrans.)</i>
kaçmak (kaçar) <i>to flee</i>	kırk <i>forty</i>
kadar <i>amount; up to (with dat.)</i>	kırmak (kırar) <i>to break (trans.)</i>
kadın <i>woman</i>	kısa <i>short</i>
kahvaltı <i>breakfast</i> kahvaltı yapmak <i>to eat breakfast</i>	kısım (kısmı) <i>section, part</i>
kahve <i>coffee; coffeehouse</i>	kız <i>girl, daughter, maiden, female</i>
kalem <i>pencil</i>	kızkardeş <i>sister</i>
kalmak (kalır) <i>to stay, remain in (with loc.)</i>	kızıl <i>red, scarlet</i>
kapalı <i>covered; roofed-over</i>	kızmak (kızar) <i>to become angry</i>
kapı <i>door</i>	ki <i>that (relative)</i>
kapıcı <i>doorkeeper, concierge</i>	kilo <i>kilogram</i>
kar <i>snow</i>	kilometre <i>kilometer</i>
kâr <i>profit</i>	kim <i>who?</i>
kara <i>black</i>	kimse <i>nobody</i>
Karaköy <i>a section of downtown Istanbul</i>	kira <i>rent</i> kirara vermek <i>to rent (to some one)</i>
karar <i>decision</i> karar vermek <i>(with dat.) to decide</i>	kiralık <i>for rent</i>
kardeş <i>brother</i>	kişi <i>person</i>
karı <i>wife</i>	kitap (kitabı) <i>book</i>
karşı <i>against, opposite</i>	kitapçı <i>bookseller</i>
kasaba <i>town</i>	kitapçılık <i>the book business</i>
Kasım <i>November</i>	klinik <i>doctor's office, clinic</i>
kat (katı) <i>floor, story (of a building)</i>	koca <i>husband</i>
katil (katli) <i>murder</i>	kol <i>arm</i>
kedi <i>cat</i>	kolay <i>easy</i>
kelime <i>word</i>	konuşmak (konuşur) <i>to talk, converse</i>
kendi <i>self; own</i>	korkmak (korkar) <i>to be afraid of (with abl.)</i>
kere <i>time, occurrence</i>	koşmak (koşar) <i>to run</i>
	koymak (koyar) <i>to put, place (with dative of the place into which the object is put)</i>

köpek *dog*
 körfez *gulf*
 köy *village*
 kul *slave, subject; worshiper*
 kulak *ear*
 kullanılmak (kullanır) *to be used*
 kuruş *kuruş (piaster, 1/100 of a Turkish Lira; unit of money)*
 kutu *box*
 küçük *small, little*
 küçülmek (küçülür) *to grow smaller*
 kütüphane *library*
 -I V² (*See ile.*)
 lâle *tulip*
 lamba *lamp, light bulb; radio tube*
 lâzım *necessary*
 limon *lemon*
 limonlu *with lemon*
 lira *lira (pound; unit of money)*
 lisan *language, tongue*
 lokanta *restaurant*
 Londra *London*
 lûtfen *please*
 Lübnan *the Lebanon*
 Lübnanî *Lebanese*
 m V⁴ (*spoken question mark*)
 maalesef *unfortunately*
 marmara *marble*
 Mart *March*
 maşallah *my goodness! (Arabic: what God wills)*
 Mayıs *May*
 mecburiyet *necessity, obligation*

mecmua *magazine*
 Mehmet (Mehmedi) *man's name (Arabic Muhammad)*
 Mehmetçik *Turkey's G.I. Joe, Tommy Atkins*
 mektep (mektebi) *school*
 mektup (mektubu) *letter*
 merhaba *hello (informal greeting)*
 metre *meter*
 mevcut *extant*
 mevki *class, rank*
 meyva *fruit*
 Mihri *woman's name*
 millî *national*
 milyar *billion*
 milyon *million*
 minare *minaret*
 Mösyö *Monsieur*
 muallim *teacher*
 muallimlik *pedagogy*
 mutlaka *positively*
 müsaade *permission*
 namaz kılmak *to perform the formal Moslem prayer ritual*
 nasıl? *how? what sort of?*
 nazaran *in view of, according to (with dat.)*
 nazır *overlooking, looking out upon (with dat.)*
 ne? *what?*
 ne (exclamatory) *how very!*
 ne . . . ne (negative) *neither . . . nor. (with positive or negative verb)*
 nere*? *where? what place?*
 netice *result, consequence*

ne zaman? *when? what time?*
 niçin (ne için)? *why?*
 Nilüfer *water lily; woman's name*
 Nisan *April*
 not *grade, mark*
 numara *grade, mark*
 o *he, she, it; that, those (demonstrative)*
 Ocak *January*
 oda *room*
 oğul (oğlu) *son*
 ok *arrow*
 okul *school*
 okumak (okur) *to read, to study*
 okunmak (okunur) *to be read*
 olmak (olur) *to become, happen*
 olunmak (olunur) *to be*
 on *ten*
 onlar *they*
 ora* *there, that place*
 otel *hotel*
 otobüs *bus*
 otomobil *automobile*
 oturmak (oturur) *to sit, dwell*
 oturtmak (oturtur) *to cause to sit or dwell*
 oturtulmak (oturtulur) *to be caused to sit or dwell*
 otuz *thirty*
 oynamak (oynar) *to play*
 öbür *the other*
 öbür gün *the day after tomorrow*
 öğle *noon*
 öğle yemeği *noon meal*
 öğrenci *pupil*

öğrenmek (öğrenir) *to learn*
 öğretmek (öğretir) *to teach*
 öğretmen *teacher*
 ölmek (ölür) *to die*
 ön *front*
 öyle *thus, in that fashion*
 pahalı *expensive*
 para *money*
 paralı *rich*
 parasız *moneyless*
 parasızlık *poverty*
 parça *part*
 pasaport *passport*
 Pazar (günü) *Sunday*
 Pazartesi (günü) *Monday*
 pek *very, very much*
 pencere *window*
 Perşembe günü *Thursday*
 peynir *cheese*
 pişirmek (pişirir) *to cook (trans.)*
 polis *police*
 portakal *orange*
 postacı *mailman*
 pul *stamp (postage, etc.)*
 radyo *radio*
 rağmen *despite (with dat.)*
 randevu *appointment*
 renk (rengi) *color*
 resmen *officially*
 rica *request*
 Rus *Russian*
 saat (saati) *hour, time; watch, clock*
 sabah *morning*
 saç *hair*

sahip (sahibi) *owner, master*
 Sait (Saidi) *man's name*
 sakın *in any case, at any cost,*
 but
 Salı (günü) *Tuesday*
 sanat (sanati) *art, craft*
 saniye *second (time)*
 satılık *for sale*
 satın almak *to buy*
 satmak (satar) *to sell*
 sebep (sebebi) *reason, cause*
 sekiz *eight*
 seksen *eighty*
 selâmlık *men's section of old*
 Turkish house
 Selim *man's name*
 Selma *woman's name*
 sen *you (familiar singular)*
 sene *year*
 sevinmek (sevinir) *to be or*
 become happy
 sevmek (sever) *to like; to love*
 seyahat *travel, trip*
 seyahat etmek *to travel*
 sıcak *hot*
 sıra *line, rank, file*
 sinema *movie house*
 siyah *black*
 siz *you (polite singular, normal*
 plural)
 sokak (sokağı) *street*
 son *last*
 sonra *after (with abl.)*
 sormak (sorar) *to ask* Mehmet
 bana onu sordu. Mehmet
 asked me (about) it.

söylemek (söyler) *to speak, say,*
 tell (not used with direct
 quotations: see demek)
 söylenmek *to be said*
 söz *word; promise*
 sözcü *speaker*
 su *water*
 Suat (Suati) *woman's or man's*
 name
 susturmak (susturur) *to cause to*
 be silent
 susuz *waterless*
 susuzluk *aridity*
 süt *milk*
 sütlü *with milk*
 Süheylâ *woman's name*
 Şam *Damascus*
 Şamî *Damascene*
 şair *poet*
 şehir (şehri) *city*
 şeker *sugar; candy*
 şekerli *with sugar*
 şekersiz *without sugar*
 şey *thing; uh- uh- ahem . . . (said*
 when one hesitates in speech)
 şikâyet *complaint* şikâyet
 etmek *to complain*
 şimdi *now*
 şimdilik *for the present*
 şirket *company, firm (business)*
 şöyle *thus; in that fashion; as*
 follows
 şu *that, those (demonstrative); at*
 some distance away; which
 follow(s)
 Şubat *February*
 Taksim *a downtown section of*
 Istanbul

talebe *student*
 tane *counting word*
 taraf *side; part; (used to express agent with passive)*
 tarif etmek *to describe, define*
 taş *stone*
 telefon etmek *to telephone*
 Temmuz *July*
 tercih etmek *to prefer (with obj. def.)*
 teşekkür etmek *to thank*
 tiyatro *theater*
 top *ball, sphere*
 tramvay *streetcar*
 tren *train*
 tutmak (tutar) *to grasp, hold, catch*
 tuz *salt*
 tuzluk *saltcellar*
 tuzluluk *saltness*
 tuzsuz *salt free*
 tuzsuzluk *saltlessness*
 Türk *Turk; Turkish*
 Türkçe *the Turkish language*
 Türkiye *Turkey*
 türlü *fashion*
 tütün *tobacco*
 tütüncü *tobacconist*
 ucuz *cheap, inexpensive*
 uçak *airplane*
 ufak *small*
 unutmak (unutur) *to forget*
 uzun *long, tall*
 üç *three*
 ümit (ümidi) *hope*

üniversite *university*
 üst *top*
 üzere (üzre) *over, upon, on the point of, for the purpose of*
 vapur *steamer, ferry*
 var *extant*
 vaz geçmek *to change one's mind about (with abl.)*
 ve *and*
 verilmek (verilir) *to be given*
 vermek (verir) *to give to (with dat. or acc.)*
 ya *and as for . . .*
 ya . . . ya *either . . . or*
 yağ *grease, (cooking) fat; (vegetable) oil*
 yağmak (yağar) *to fall as precipitation*
 yağmur *rain*
 yağmurlu *rainy*
 yalan *lie, falsehood*
 yalnız *only, alone*
 yan *side*
 yani *that is, i.e., I mean*
 yapılmak (yapılır) *to be made*
 yapmak (yapar) *to make, do*
 yaramazlık *mischief*
 yardım *help*
 yarım *one half (not used with other numbers)*
 yaş *age (of humans)*
 yaşlı *old (of humans)*
 yatak *bed*
 yavaş *slowly*
 yazı *writing, article*
 yazıcı *secretary (usually in the armed forces)*

yazık *a pity, too bad*
yazmak (yazar) *to write*
yedi *seven*
yemek (yer) *to eat*
yemek *food, meal* yemek yemek
to eat a meal
yeni *new*
yer *place, location*
yetmiş *seventy*
yıkamak (yıklar) *to wash (trans.)*
yikanmak (yikanır) *to wash*
(reflexive)
yıl *year*
yılmak (yılar) *to flinch*
yine *again*

yok *non-existent*
yol *road, voyage*
yukarı *up*
yumuşak *soft*
yüksek *high, tall*
yükselmek (yükselir) *to grow*
higher
yüz *face; hundred*
yüzmek (yüzer) *to swim*
zaman *time* bazı zaman *some-*
times bir zamanlar *sometimes*
zaten *as a matter of fact, in*
reality, at any rate
zengin *wealthy*
zira *because*

ELEMENTARY TURKISH

Lewis V. Thomas

Revised and Edited by Norman Itzkowitz

Turkish is the primary language of some thirty million people. Anyone concerned with current social, political and cultural developments in Turkey knows that a practical understanding of the basic patterns of modern Turkish is an invaluable skill that until now has been difficult to attain without extensive training.

This superb grammar and exercise text, used successfully for years at Princeton University, enables English-speaking students—in and out of the classroom—to gain a quick and thorough understanding of modern Turkish. In a carefully arranged sequence of 23 lessons, Lewis V. Thomas, late Professor of Oriental Studies at Princeton, presents thorough coverage that allows the student to begin to use the basic patterns of modern Turkish without time-consuming and expensive private instruction.

The method of instruction was devised after an extensive analysis of results in Princeton classrooms, and relies on exercises at the end of each lesson to test the student's grasp of the material. Beginning with the alphabet and numbers, Professor Thomas offers clear, concise coverage of articles, adjectives and nouns, common infinitives, personal pronouns, and elementary verbs. As the student's comprehension of basic elements develops, further lessons deal with more complicated subjects such as the possessive construction, past general verbs, postpositions, the partitive, progressive verb forms, and abbreviating verb forms. A complete Turkish-English glossary translates new vocabulary occurring in the exercises.

Norman Itzkowitz, Professor of Near Eastern Studies at Princeton University, has skillfully made the necessary revisions and additions to complete Professor Thomas' work. For anyone who needs to communicate in this important and influential language, Professor Thomas' proven course, now in an inexpensive paperback edition, is the most effective method available.

Unabridged, slightly corrected Dover (1986) republication of the first edition published by Harvard University Press, 1967. Glossary. 192pp. 5% × 8%. Paperbound.

See every Dover book in print at
www.doverpublications.com

ISBN 0-486-25064-4



50895



\$8.95 IN USA
\$13.50 IN CANADA

9 780486 250649